

**Please cite the Published Version**

Batsleer, Janet and Duggan, James (2020) Young and Lonely The Social Conditions of Loneliness. Policy Press. ISBN 978-1447355342

**Publisher:** Policy Press

**Downloaded from:** <https://e-space.mmu.ac.uk/626798/>

**Usage rights:** © In Copyright

**Enquiries:**

If you have questions about this document, contact [openresearch@mmu.ac.uk](mailto:openresearch@mmu.ac.uk). Please include the URL of the record in e-space. If you believe that your, or a third party's rights have been compromised through this document please see our Take Down policy (available from <https://www.mmu.ac.uk/library/using-the-library/policies-and-guidelines>)

1    **YOUNG & LONELY: The Social Conditions of Loneliness**

2    Janet Batsleer & Dr James Duggan

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10	<b>Table of Contents</b>	
11	<b>&lt;2&gt; LIST OF TABLES</b>	<b>6</b>
12	<b>&lt;2&gt; LIST OF FIGURES</b>	<b>6</b>
13	<b>&lt;2&gt; NOTES ON THE AUTHORS</b>	<b>6</b>
14	<b>&lt;2&gt; PREFACE/ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS</b>	<b>7</b>
15	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER ONE: ANIMATE, ATTUNE, AMPLIFY</b>	<b>9</b>
16	<b>&lt;2&gt; WHAT IS LONELINESS?</b>	<b>10</b>
17	<b>&lt;2&gt; THE PROJECT'S INTELLECTUAL AND PRACTICE BASE</b>	<b>11</b>
18	<b>&lt;3&gt; YOUTH WORK</b>	<b>11</b>
19	<b>&lt;3&gt; PARTNERSHIPS AND ASSOCIATION</b>	<b>12</b>
20	<b>&lt;3&gt; A TRANSDISCIPLINARY APPROACH</b>	<b>13</b>
21	<b>&lt;3&gt; AMPLIFYING THE RESEARCH</b>	<b>15</b>
22	<b>&lt;2&gt; THE STRUCTURE OF THE BOOK</b>	<b>16</b>
23	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 2: FINDING ONESELF A LONELINESS AGENDA</b>	<b>18</b>
24	<b>&lt;2&gt; WHY YOUTH LONELINESS NOW?</b>	<b>18</b>
25	<b>&lt;2&gt; TROUBLING THE YOUTH LONELINESS AGENDA</b>	<b>21</b>
26	<b>&lt;3&gt; NEOLIBERALISATION AND AUSTERITY</b>	<b>21</b>
27	<b>&lt;3&gt; BEYOND THE INDIVIDUALISATION OF LONELINESS</b>	<b>24</b>
28	<b>&lt;2&gt; LONELINESS AS CONTAGION AND CRISIS</b>	<b>26</b>
29	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 3: I'M NEW HERE: CREATING A NEW RESEARCH PROJECT AND A YOUNG PERSON LED</b>	
30	<b>RESEARCH AGENDA</b>	<b>30</b>
31	<b>&lt;2&gt; A NEW RESEARCH PROJECT</b>	<b>32</b>
32	<b>&lt;2&gt; A ROBOT STORY BOARD</b>	<b>34</b>
33	<b>&lt;2&gt; COMMUNITY PHILOSOPHY</b>	<b>37</b>
34	<b>&lt;2&gt; A STREET WALK AT DUSK</b>	<b>40</b>
35	<b>&lt;2&gt; THE LONELINESS PLAY LIST</b>	<b>41</b>
36	<b>&lt;2&gt; A YOUTH-LED RESEARCH AGENDA</b>	<b>43</b>
37	<b>&lt;1&gt; SECTION I: THE SOCIAL CONDITIONS OF LONELINESS</b>	<b>48</b>
38	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 4: LONELINESS AND POVERTY</b>	<b>50</b>
39	<b>&lt;2&gt; POVERTY: NO MONEY</b>	<b>55</b>

40	<2> POVERTY: 'UNCARED-FOR' TOWNS; 'THIS IS THE WORST PLACE FOR...'	59
41	<2> POVERTY: POOR MENTAL HEALTH AND DRUG USE/ABUSE	62
42	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 5: BEING AN OUTSIDER</b>	<b>66</b>
43	<2> DISABILITY AND SEGREGATION	67
44	<2> SEXUALITY AND ISOLATION	68
45	<2> RACISM, SEGREGATION AND ISOLATION	71
46	<2> ISOLATION AND KEEPING OUT OF TROUBLE	72
47	<2> YOUTH LONELINESS AND PLACE	73
48	<2> YOUTH LONELINESS: SEGREGATION, STIGMA AND RACISM	74
49	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 6: THE EDUCATION SYSTEM, ASPIRATION AND LONELINESS</b>	<b>78</b>
50	<2> INDIVIDUALISM	81
51	<2> INSTRUMENTALITY, WORK AND ACHIEVEMENT	83
52	<2> 'YOU CAN'T KEEP RUNNING TO MUMMY AND DADDY'	86
53	<b>&lt;1&gt; SECTION 2: THE EXPERIENCE OF LONELINESS</b>	<b>90</b>
54	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 7: TRANSITIONS</b>	<b>93</b>
55	<2> YOUTH LONELINESS AND TRANSITION	93
56	<2> STARTING SECONDARY SCHOOL	96
57	<2> MOVING	102
58	<2> STARTING WORK	103
59	<2> INDEPENDENT LIVING	104
60	<2> ROMANTIC RELATIONSHIPS	105
61	<2> THE PLAY 'MISSING' AND THE CHARACTER JESSICA	106
62	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 8: LOSS, GRIEF AND LONELINESS</b>	<b>109</b>
63	<2> ATTEMPTED SUICIDE	111
64	<2> VIOLENCE, TRAUMA AND LONELINESS	116
65	<2> THE LONELINESS OF EXILE	120
66	<b>&lt;1&gt; CHAPTER 9: BEING LEFT OUT</b>	<b>124</b>
67	<2> BEING COLD-SHOULDERED	126
68	<2> AUTISM AS LONELINESS	127

69	<2> THE WELL OF LONELINESS	129
70	<2> FEELINGS OF FAILURE AND DISAPPOINTMENT/NOT BEING ABLE TO SHARE THE LONELINESS	134
71	<1> CHAPTER 10: ONLINE SPACES AND CONNECTION	138
72	<2> ONLINE CONNECTION	144
73	<2> EXPANDING COLLECTIVE YOUTH CAPACITIES	145
74	<1> SECTION 3: BUILDING FRIENDSHIP AND CONNECTION	151
75	<1> CHAPTER 11: ASKING FOR HELP AND OFFERING CONNECTION	153
76	<2> YOUNG PEOPLE'S MUTUAL SUPPORT	154
77	<2> YOUNG PEOPLE AND MUTUAL SUPPORT: SMALL ACTS OF FRIENDSHIP AND CONNECTION	156
78	<2> ASKING FOR HELP AND THE QUESTION OF POWER	161
79	<1> CHAPTER 12: YOUTH WORK AS A METHOD	167
80	<2> YOUTH WORK AS ENGAGEMENT	167
81	<2> YOUTH WORK AS METHOD: THE 'CORNERSTONES' IN ACTION	171
82	<2> YOUNG PEOPLE AND LONELINESS: YOUTH WORK, RESEARCH AND SOCIAL ACTION	178
83	<2> ASSOCIATION AS A COUNTER-STRATEGY AGAINST LONELINESS: THE POTENTIAL OF CLUBS	183
84	<1> CHAPTER 13: CREATIVITY AND SOLIDARITY AS METHOD: THE EXAMPLE OF 'MISSING' AND	
85	OTHER STORIES	189
86	<2> SOMETHING TO DO TOGETHER AND ALONE: THE IMPORTANCE OF SHARED INTERESTS AND CREATIVITY	200
87	<2> CREATIVITY, SOLITUDE AND SOLIDARITY	202
88	<2> FRIENDSHIP AND SOLIDARITY	204
89	<1> CHAPTER 14 - NEW WAYS FOR THINKING AND FEELING LONELINESS	207
90	<2> LONELINESS BEYOND THE INDIVIDUAL	208
91	<2> THE <i>LONELINESS CONNECTS US</i> YOUTH CO-RESEARCHER AGENDA	212
92	<3> THE SOCIAL CONDITIONS OF LONELINESS. EXPERIENCING DIFFERENCE.	212
93	<3> RE-IMAGINING CONNECTION	214
94	<3> YOUTH WORK PRACTICES AND MOVING METHODS	215
95	<2> RE-ENGAGING WITH THE LONELINESS AGENDA	218
96	<2> RADICAL DEMOCRACY	221
97	<2> RECOMMENDATIONS	225

99

100

101

102

## **<2> List of tables**

Table 1: Forms of youth engagement during phase two

## **<2> List of figures**

Figure 1: #iwill youth social action model

## **<2> Notes on the authors**

Janet Batsleer (Faculty of Education, Manchester Met University) is a Reader in Youth and Community. Her research focuses on the development of critical perspectives in informal learning, particularly in youth work. She has a particular interest in ‘putting theory to work’ in relation to the socio-cultural educative project of community-based learning. She draws on contemporary and historic feminist and anti-racist theory. She is interested in the dialogue between UK based work and European traditions of social pedagogy and socio-cultural animation. She supports action research linked to local projects as a way of developing these critical interests.

Dr James Duggan (Faculty of Education, Manchester Met University) is a Research Fellow in Childhood, Youth and Education Studies. His research interests are in exploring the productive tensions between community-based and public sector ways of organising. He is increasingly interested in exploring and developing theoretical and practical alternatives for public organising and appropriate creative and co-productive methodologies for researching and supporting these processes.

## <2> Preface/Acknowledgements

This book presents the youth co-research from the *Loneliness Connects Us* project, which ran from October 2016 to July 2019. This was a collaborative research project between academics at Manchester Metropolitan University and 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, a Manchester charity specialising in support to young people who are experiencing mental health difficulties/emotional distress. The Co-op Foundation funded the research as part of its strategic engagement with youth loneliness, and the research informed its Belong network.

We would like to acknowledge and share our gratitude with all those who contributed to making *Loneliness Connects Us* such a wonderful project. At 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, Simone Spray (CEO), Karina Nyananyo, Tess Gregson, and Julie McCarthy (Creative Director) were instrumental to developing and delivering the work. It was a privilege to work with the 14 youth co-researchers whose ideas and insights are presented in this book. Hwa Young Jung, Mark Carrigan, Ransack Theatre, and our youth artist Felicity led sessions on DIY making, social media, immersive theatre, and cartoon drawing. Tricia Coleman and Jana Wendler were commissioned to design and perform the immersive theatre piece *Missing*. Jane Hollington was the actor playing the Chief Super Intendant. We toured 'Missing' in sites across the United Kingdom, which would not have been possible without the support of West Rhyl Young People's Project, MAP Norfolk, N-Gage 360 Ballymeena, Fairbridge/The Prince's Trust, Glasgow. Thanks also to Ruth Cogan at MSV Housing, Kemoy Walker from Kyso, Nikki Woods and PLANT for their help in developing the legacy project. Finally, we would like to thank the 200+ young people who took the time to engage with this project and share their personal and sometimes painful experiences of loneliness.

We talked to and worked with a lot of young people and adults across the *Loneliness Connects Us* project, and an orientating idea to understand how we could relate and



149 communicate these many voices was polyphony. As opposed to cacophony or symphony,  
150 which are discordant and harmonised musical arrangements, polyphony is music with two  
151 or more voices or themes that are distinct within a work. It is this respect and attempt to  
152 hold but not simplify or reconcile the diverse perspectives of the many young people we  
153 met and talked to that was a firm commitment for us throughout the project and in this  
154 writing.

155 JB & JD

## <1> Chapter One: Animate, Attune, Amplify

This book reports and reflects on the *Loneliness Connects Us* youth co-research project (2016-2018). In 2016, the Co-op Foundation funded the project as the first significant participatory inquiry into youth loneliness. The aims of the research were to animate, attune to and amplify the insights of youth co-researchers on youth loneliness. Then, grow these conversations into a dialogue with an emerging national discussion on youth loneliness. This chapter outlines the theoretical and practice-based resources in which the research was grounded.

Loneliness and youth loneliness have been a focus for study across the millennia and the academe, spanning the arts, philosophy, literature and poetry, politics, psychology, sociology, medicine and public health. There is not space here to review the various fields that contribute to better understanding loneliness in anything like sufficient detail. It is important to recognise that thus far the psychological research is incredibly influential in the youth loneliness agenda. Throughout the book we will engage with key insights from psychology but also identify limitations and biases for thinking about and intervening in young people's experience of loneliness. We do not think that any particular academic discipline or field of study holds dominium over the study of loneliness, and so we join calls for interdisciplinary research to better understand youth loneliness (Qualter et al. 2018).

In particular it is the participatory or co-produced turn to understand youth loneliness with and from the perspective of young people that poses exciting possibilities and troubling challenges for research in this subject. The shift to understand loneliness from the perspective of young people is to acknowledge that 'youth' and 'loneliness' are categories that we apply to make sense of incredibly complex, emergent and social events and experiences. Youth loneliness relates our thinking to young people that are neither just lonely nor just young. We make the case for acknowledging that our lives are filled with meaning, riddled with shame and guilt, inspired by hope and imagination, and much richer and worthwhile for it.

It is by working with young people and developing the research as they reflect on their feelings of loneliness but also as they look at the communities and society they live in, the future they hope for or are afraid of, that an inquiry into, for example, the relationships with

community and the intensity of loneliness emerges. It is in beginning with shared life experiences and biographies that our focus extends beyond analytical categories of normative or social loneliness to consider loneliness within the richness of the lives young people are living and would wish to live. It is in attending to these complex and emergent relationships that we have been able to disentangle the paradox of 21st loneliness: how people can be lonely in a crowd (Turkle 2011), isolated amongst abundant potential connection.

This chapter outlines approaches to understanding youth loneliness, and the project's intellectual and practice base in youth work, before providing a structure of the book.

## <2> What is loneliness?

Loneliness is subjective, something that is perceived and felt, rather than simply a description of or the experience of being alone. In the classic definition from psychology, loneliness is defined as the negative emotions that accompany a discrepancy between one's desired and achieved levels of social relations (Perlman & Peplau 1981). Prominent loneliness scholars Cacioppo, Fowler, and Christakis (2009) define loneliness as *perceived* social isolation. For an objective measure of a lack of connectedness, as in someone living in a remote area and having few to zero human interactions, we describe this as social isolation (Victor et al. 2000). De Jong-Gierveld, van Tilburg, and Dykstra (2016) locate social isolation on a continuum from social isolation to social participation; where social isolation is defined as, 'Persons with an absence or a small number of meaningful ties are, by definition, socially isolated.' Although isolation and loneliness are linked it does not necessarily follow that isolated people will feel lonely or that people who are surrounded by others will not feel lonely.

Experiences of loneliness can be intensely painful. Evolutionary understandings of human behaviour popular in psychology teach us that loneliness represents an adaptive drive for individuals to reconnect with other people (Cacioppo & Patrick 2009). The human body feels social pain and physical pain in overlapping neurological and physiological responses (Riva, Wirth & Williams 2011). Thus loneliness is a form of social pain that creates a drive to action to increase the quantity or quality of social connection, as physical pain motivates us to move, hunger to eat, and thirst to drink (Cacioppo et al. 2011).

Loneliness is in part an abjected and stigmatised state. It is prudent to acknowledge there is still debate amongst academics as to whether we have sufficient evidence to claim that loneliness *is* stigmatised and stigmatising (Qualter et al. 2018). There are, however, powerful social and psychological pressures to appear socially successful, and loneliness is thus something that young people, like others, may seek to hide or deny, and find difficult to talk about. Furthermore, researchers have identified maladaptive social cognition in people experiencing loneliness, which is a tendency for lonely people to appear anti-social, as they misunderstand social cues and are awkward in social interactions (Cacioppo & Hawkley 2009). Since loneliness is the discrepancy between actual and preferred social connection, researching loneliness may involve asking someone to confront this difference between their life as it is now, how they would prefer or need it to be, and the constrained capacities for change (e.g. Zipin et al. 2015). Researching loneliness, therefore, requires considerable care to be ethical, safe and productive.

## <2> The project's intellectual and practice base

The account of loneliness thus far is derived from research in psychology but our approach to the *Loneliness Connects Us* project was that no single discipline is capable of adequately engaging with such a diverse subject as youth loneliness. To be able to hope to understand youth loneliness in an appropriate context required analyses of psychology and epidemiology but also readings in youth studies, politics and sociological discussions of the effects of the austerity regime or precaritised work, and the young people's use of the Internet and social media technologies. More important still was the ways in which the youth co-researchers could be critically introduced to the diverse ways in which loneliness is understood. This involved both discussions of research findings and statistics and insights into loneliness from, for example, the diaries of the pioneering modernist Virginia Woolf. Giving coherence to this plural approach, however, were a series of intellectual and practice commitments emerging from youth work.

## <3> Youth work

*Loneliness Connects Us* was deeply grounded in critical radical democratic traditions of youth and community work, understood as a practice of non-formal or informal education, association and socio-cultural animation (Batsleer 2008; de St Croix 2016). The research was grounded in a series of practices for working with young people, including critical

participatory action research and creative co-produced research (Fine 2016; Bell & Pahl 2018), understandings of youth work methods as socio-cultural animation and accompaniment (Batsleer 2008), socially engaged arts practice (Bishop 2012; Boal 1995), and various feminist and social movement activist practices for listening and attuning to one another across and united by difference (Lorde 1984; bergman & Montgomery 2017). The forms of knowledge (co-)produced through such processes, however, are necessarily unruly, as the intention is to include those that do not count and have no part in the discussion, working to make the invisible visible and the inaudible heard in conditions of equality (Ranciere 2010).

The theoretical orientations of the research followed recent developments in critical practice in grassroots youth work. So, for example, starting where young people *are* and negotiating an agenda for practice is a key principle of youth work. Programmes of youth work are characteristically developed out of conversation with the group and through an analysis of the social conditions prevailing in the area. Youth work methods are characterised by activity, association, and challenge: ‘learning together by doing’ and so the offer of opportunities to take part in drama, and art and craft activities, and making radio programmes, as well as more traditional research activities made sense. The research methods can be accounted for in a variety of ways but they flowed easily from a practice which has often been aligned with critical participatory action research. It has used its own version of creative auditing, using creative activities and time away on residentials and the tour to enable a deeper listening to and engagement with the lives of young people, in order to offer support to their increasing capacities.

### <3> Partnerships and association

A continual set of concerns throughout the project was how we could ethically and productively invite young people to explore what loneliness meant to them. In line with youth work practice, we worked through association and partnerships, all of which emerged from the strong network of youth and community work academics and practitioners in Manchester and the United Kingdom.

We developed the research in partnership with 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, a youth mental health and well-being organisation in Greater Manchester that specialises in arts and social action practices as part of a holistic offer to young people. This was important because we wanted to

develop a project infrastructure that attended to a politics of space, and the necessary conditions of welcome, care and support required to co-produce research with young people (Bell & Pahl 2018). Locating the research in a youth mental health organisation was significant as engagements with loneliness could be traumatic. As an ethical commitment we wanted the young people to be able to access pastoral and counselling support within the project infrastructure and not signpost them to youth mental health services, as there might be significant waits for a referral and service delivery.

With some young people these encounters would last the duration of the project but for many others these interactions would be brief, yet still asking them to reflect on potentially difficult feelings. As part of the research we developed and toured a play called 'Missing.' It was performed in Rhyl, Ballymena, Glasgow, Great Yarmouth and Manchester each time in partnership with an existing youth work project, to locate these conversations within existing relationships of care and support between the young people and a youth worker.

### <3> A transdisciplinary approach

The *Loneliness Connects Us* research was animated and enriched through an engagement with the multiple traditions and disciplines of youth work research and practice. Youth work has always worked within a transdisciplinary approach in the intellectual resources on which it draws and so was eminently suited to the overarching concern to understand loneliness within its properly social context. The book draws throughout on the wider sociological discussions of 'youth', the transdisciplinary project of Women's Studies, and on many themes widely discussed in education research on social pedagogy. Two disciplines in particular have been influential in Youth Work and on the project: sociology and education. The theoretical analysis which informs each section draws on some key ideas which we introduce briefly below and in the introduction to each section there is further discussion of these key theoretical framings. At this point we simply want to introduce some of the key thinkers and concepts which frame the subsequent analysis:

The first section of the book concerns the social conditions of loneliness. We introduce key sociological analyses relating to the natures of poverty, community, and the education system. An important theme which runs throughout the book is that of the impact of social abjection and 'shame'. The idea of social abjection is introduced in Chapter Three on ***Loneliness & Poverty*** and then recurs throughout the book. The whole analysis here is

309 deeply indebted to the work of Imogen Tyler (2013, 2020), whose whole rethinking of how  
310 social subjects are now being formed in conditions of neoliberal capitalism, is of first  
311 importance. From *Revolting Subjects* to *The Stigma Machine*, Tyler has demonstrated how  
312 the powers of classification mobilised through media discourses and social experience  
313 conjoin in the production of social disgust and shame, and how the populations who are the  
314 subjects of such discourses respond.

315 Tyler's work involves a recasting of an earlier feminist discussion of the role of emotion and  
316 affect in the subjection or oppression of women. She takes key psychoanalytic concepts and  
317 works with them sociologically to enable a sharper understanding of how powerful affects  
318 shape the experience of oppression. And her work is just one of the feminist framings  
319 which we draw on in this book.

320 The second section of the book mobilises well-established feminist discussions of the nature  
321 of 'the normal', which began with Judith Butler's (1990) unsettling of gender as a taken-for-  
322 granted heteronormative system in her *Gender Trouble*. A good deal of the empirical  
323 material presented in the book reflects on both the loneliness associated with being normal  
324 and the loneliness associated with being different, and so the analysis of the processes by  
325 which norms are established and unsettled, which has been a key project of feminist and  
326 queer theory, has been valuable. Audre Lorde's inspirational affirmations of difference as a  
327 source of creativity and knowing, in the face of the distortion of difference in the service of  
328 division, violence and control provide an essential entry point into the perspectives broadly  
329 understood as Queer Theory.

330 In the final section, the significance of theorisations drawn from the field of education and  
331 specifically the broadly understood field of community education comes to the fore. In fact,  
332 there is a rich vein in theorisations of community education in the UK which focus on youth  
333 work. It is indeed only now belatedly being recognised how much these discussions have in  
334 common with the discussions of social pedagogy, rooted as they are in ideas of social  
335 education (Batsleer 2013). The discussion of friendship as a practice has clear resonance  
336 with Mark Smith's work on friendship in *Informal Education*; the discussion of socio-cultural  
337 animation and creativity resonates with Batsleer's earlier work in particular but also the  
338 emerging writing which has inspired the *Creative Margins* network (Sim 2019); and the  
339 question of supporting expanded notions of community and solidarity resonates with

current theorisations of community development (Emejulu 2011). But here the theories that are being put to work are also emergent, reaching for new languages adequate to the task, including those developing as part of new materialist research projects in our own Research Institute.

Finally, we have been inspired by current work in the Humanities which is exploring the question of solitude, and although it is loneliness rather than solitude which is central here, it has been impossible to write and think about one without the other. Conversations with Sara Maitland have been generative here and we look forward to the findings of Professor Barbara Taylor's research project 'Pathologies of Solitude' which exemplifies this final important context for our work.

### <3> Amplifying the research

The research was funded with the explicit intention to develop youth co-research into loneliness and then to share these insights to help young people and the practitioners that work with and for them navigate experiences of loneliness. Part of the rationale for conducting co-produced or participatory research is that working to understand an issue with the affected communities creates insights and recommendations that are more relevant and useful (Matthews et al. 2017). A core part of the process for the *Loneliness Connects Us* co-research was thinking about ethical and productive forms of encounter to enable young people to critically reflect on what it means to be lonely. Yet as these conversations multiplied and the project's insights grew, we were tasked with the challenges of how to mobilise this knowledge. Through the project we sought a balance between more traditional forms of research impact activity (e.g. speaking to the media, hosting events, making presentations to policy makers) with approaches that engaged with emerging ideas around the importance of feeling and experiencing loneliness through, for example, immersive theatre. The project's engagement with amplifying the research is found throughout the book. For example: Chapter 2 outlines the research's expansive approach, growing from one-to-one engagements to touring a performance and hosting a youth summit. Chapter 10 describes the legacy project to help young people deal with FOMO. Chapter 13 details the translation of the emerging findings into Missing an immersive theatre piece.



## <2> The structure of the book

This introduction – Chapter 1 *Animate, Attune, Amplify* – has outlined the project’s approach to the research. Chapter 2 *Finding Oneself a Loneliness Agenda* presents the policy context for the youth loneliness agenda and the emerging national conversation in which we hoped to amplify the contribution of the youth co-researchers. Chapter 3 *I’m New Here* explains our focus on youth and transition. We detail the carousel of moving methods that enabled us to work with the youth co-researchers through an iterative and expansive engagement with loneliness in different forms, modalities, spaces and practices.

The chapters in Section 1 describe *The Social Conditions of Loneliness* exploring the specific social conditions of inequality that make access to social opportunities and social connection difficult. Chapter 4 *Loneliness and Poverty* locates this discussion within the broader context of austerity, poverty, inequality and the pervasive impacts on young people’s social and emotional lives. Chapter 5 *Being an Outsider* focuses on the ways ‘outsider’ positions are constructed, which help to constitute the social conditions of loneliness in different places and spaces. In chapter 6 *The Education System, Aspiration and Loneliness* we relate youth loneliness to the ways in which the individualisation of education and aspiration has contributed to senses of isolation and failure. Furthermore, it is these discourses of success and resilience that can make it so difficult for young people to admit they are struggling and to access support.

The chapters in section 2 *The Experience of Loneliness* discuss what we learned during our youth co-research project about young people’s experiences of loneliness. Chapter 7 *Transitions* explores everyday moments and transitional events – moving school, breaking up, starting work – and how they relate to feelings of profound if often transient loneliness in the lives of young people. We consider both what psychologists call ‘normative’ loneliness in addition to the loneliness created for those defined as different and isolated by the exclusionary power of normativity. In Chapter 8 *Loss, Grief and Loneliness* we move to look in depth at some of the most extreme and difficult experiences associated with loneliness. Chapter 9 *Being Left Out* presents the experience of being left out and other experiences of not fitting in from a variety of perspectives. In chapter 10 *Online Spaces and Connection* we question the simplistic and deterministic relationships between youth

loneliness and social media, to explore the creative but also oppressive ways in which Internet technologies are woven into the fabric of collective and individual lives.

In section 3 ***Building friendship and connection*** the chapters reflects on the various forms of creativity enacted by young people and available to those that work with and for them. Chapter 11 ***Asking for Help and Offering Connection*** focuses on the creative strategies young people find to establish and sustain connection and mutual support. We also explore the complexity of asking for help and giving and receiving it at a time in life when a growing independence is prized above everything. Chapter 12 ***Youth Work as a Method*** describes the ways in which youth work practices and settings were crucial to the youth co-research, and also how youth work has become integral to the broader response to the youth loneliness agenda. In chapter 13 ***Creativity and Solidarity as Method*** relates the ways in which the project developed ‘Missing’, an immersive theatre performance from the emerging findings of the youth co-research. We explore the ways in which creativity and performance are foundational to experiences and relations of solidarity, activism and mutuality. Chapter 14 ***New Ways of Thinking and Relating to Loneliness*** concludes by presenting a series of recommendations for research, policy, practitioners and young people to begin to build more convivial communities in which it is okay to enjoy solitude and where all young people have access to the material and social conditions to reduce unwanted experiences of loneliness.

## **<1> Chapter 2: Finding oneself a loneliness agenda**

Youth loneliness is an issue that evidently has come of age. It is nevertheless a puzzle that in the twenty-teens we are concerned that arguably the most connected generation in human history is struggling with loneliness and social isolation. Yet this seems to be the case.

Alongside the interest in elder loneliness, the response to youth loneliness has been a textbook case for anyone hoping to promote, advocate or agitate to get traction and action on a public policy issue. Internationally, public health officials, researchers and the media claim we are facing a loneliness epidemic (Murthy 2016; Holt-Lunstadt 2017; Easton 2018; Howe 2019). In the UK, we have seen a range of charity reports and strategy documents on loneliness (Griffin 2010; Kantar Public, Red Cross & Co-op 2016), the creation of dedicated funding programmes (e.g. Co-op Foundation's *Belong* network; DCMS and Co-op Foundation's *Spaces to Connect* programme), a government strategy document, and an international first in the appointment of a 'minister for loneliness' (DCMS 2018). Nevertheless, this book is in part a call to a pause and rethink the youth loneliness agenda as can be evidenced through a key features of the emerging national conversation.

The second part of the research's aim was to amplify the voices of young people in this conversation about youth loneliness. There is not space to tell the complete story of the rise of youth loneliness as a high-profile media and policy concern. Instead, we will explore a series of trends and milestones that emerged through a number of contingent events, with a view to creating a more unsettled and open way of thinking about young people and loneliness. This chapter therefore outlines the features of the loneliness agenda with sections on why youth loneliness now and troubling the youth loneliness agenda in relation to neoliberalisation and austerity, contagion and crisis.

### **<2> Why youth loneliness now?**

A question we returned to throughout the research was, why youth loneliness *now*? What does thinking of loneliness illuminate or obscure in the contemporary experience of young people? Academics or practitioners are only too grateful to be working on an issue that enters the spotlight with the associated funding. We often fail or cannot afford to question why everyone is suddenly paying attention. So: Why youth loneliness now?

For the last decade in the United Kingdom, an increasing number of organisations that work with and for young people published research and strategies relating to youth loneliness. In 2009, in a report on the importance of transitions to youth well-being, Action for Children (2009) surveyed 500 young people and found 25% of 6-13 year olds and 25% reported feeling lonely. The Childline case notes reflect on the conversations the organisation has with young people that contact the service for confidential advice and support. The notes published in 2010 revealed that between March 2008 and April 2009, 9,924 children (6,385 girls and 3,089 boys) contacted Childline to talk about loneliness as a primary or an additional problem, which is 6% of all young people that year (Hutchison & Woods 2010). The Mental Health Foundation found that younger people (18-34 years) are more likely to be lonely than older people, with 12% feeling lonely often, 53% having felt depressed due to loneliness, and 14% had sought help due to feeling lonely (Griffin 2010). As part of its 'Five of the Future campaign', ACEVO (Association of Chief Executives of Voluntary Organisations) published 'Coming in from the Cold' (ACEVO 2015). Although some aspects of their findings were nationwide, the report focused mainly on London. It suggested the idea of the 'grey zone' where loneliness progresses from an individual problem through a process of contagion to affect the community at large. In 2016, The Red Cross and Co-op Group commissioned 'Trapped in a Bubble' (Kantar Public, Red Cross & Co-op 2016) that found that 32% of 16 to 24 year olds were 'always/often lonely'. Despite this conflation of two potential categories the report presented a compelling case to attend to youth loneliness and in particular to loneliness affecting young single parents.

The shift to youth loneliness was foregrounded by anxieties about elder loneliness and the emphasis on loneliness as an intergenerational issue (e.g. Victor & Yang 2011), a focus on loneliness across the lifecourse (e.g. Jopling & Sserwnja 2016) and neighbourhood approaches to loneliness (e.g. JRF 2013). Loneliness was, at least in the UK, considered more of an issue of old age. The UK faces an ageing population and a funding gap in adult social care, with stark consequences for the quality of life for elderly people especially those living alone. Loneliness has found a significant place in this debate about ageing, informed by claims of the severe health effects of loneliness, worse as claimed than smoking 15-20 cigarettes a day (Campaign to End Loneliness 2019) – a claim drawn from a meta-analysis on social relationships and mortality (Holt-Lunstad, Smith & Layton 2010). In response a

number of national organisations developed campaigns and programmes of action, such as the *Campaign to End Loneliness*. Nevertheless, as part of these agendas, youth has emerged as a significant period of life in which loneliness manifests. Victor and Yang (2011) identified a nonlinear ‘u’ distribution of loneliness across the lifespan (16-105 years), with those under 25 and over 65 years old reporting the highest levels of loneliness. Qualter and colleagues (2013) extended this perspective to include young people aged 5-17 years old, identifying a prevalence of people feeling lonely sometimes or often 11%-20% for ages 12-15 years old and 20%-71% for ages 15-21 years old. This research focuses on loneliness in relation to particular life events and normative transitions as sources of loneliness, such as ‘Lack of close friend, lack of romantic relationship, nonacceptance as possible mate’ as explanation for loneliness amongst 15-21 year olds (Qualter et al. 2013:253).

The BBC Loneliness Experiment is the largest survey of youth loneliness yet undertaken, with over 55,000 participants over the age of 16 years old taking part, developed through a partnership between the BBC’s programme ‘All in the Mind’, the Wellcome Collection and academics Professor Pamela Qualter (University of Manchester), Professor Christina Victor (Brunel University London) and Professor Manuela Barreto (University of Exeter). At the time of writing the results of the study are only available in a series of web pages and radio programmes (Hammond 2018a, 2018b; Manchester Institute of Education 2018). The findings tell us that 16-24 year olds feel lonelier than over 57s, 40% compared with 27%. People with more online only friends are likely to feel lonelier, as are people with higher levels of rated empathy. The study looks set to challenge accepted understandings of stigma and loneliness; although there is evidence that people feel ashamed of being loneliness, youth participants were more likely to say that they did not see other people feeling alone as something that was bad and stigmatising. Further, people who identified as LGBT or with lower socioeconomic status only felt lonelier if they felt discriminated against.

The scale of the BBC Loneliness Experiment means that its findings will shape what we know about loneliness for the next decade, yet we see ways in which the *Loneliness Connects Us* co-research can complement what is known. As an online survey there are acknowledged issues with self-selection bias, especially for completing a survey on the BBC website, possibly affecting the types of participant and the views about loneliness and, especially,

stigma. So there is space to explore these findings in relation to a more diverse series of methods, spaces and encounters between young people and loneliness.

As crucial as all these contributions have been, however, in our opinion loneliness and youth loneliness would not have come to such national prominence without the assassination of Jo Cox, Labour MP for Batley and Spen, on 16th June 2016. Her tragic and untimely death led to a global outpouring of grief and donations that created the Jo Cox Foundation to build Jo's legacy through a series of initiatives close to her life's work, nationally and internationally (Jo Cox Foundation 2019). The Jo Cox Commission on Loneliness was convened in January 2017, co-chaired by Rachel Reeves MP and Seema Kennedy MP, and supported by 13 charities. The Commission reported in December 2017 with fifteen recommendations at three levels, including a UK wide Strategy for Loneliness for all ages, a lead Minister<sup>[1]</sup><sub>SEP</sub> for loneliness, a loneliness 'Family Test' for policy, and the development of an evidence base for policy (Jo Cox Commission on Loneliness 2017). These recommendations were accepted and developed as part of the UK Government's 'A connected society: A strategy for tackling loneliness' (DCMS 2018).

Through the 2010s we have as a society remembered or become able to attend to the issue of youth loneliness, at root a realisation that times of transition and separation from who we were and who we are becoming – the very essence of youth – can be profoundly unsettling and painful. As powerful and persuasive the loneliness agenda has been in propelling the issue into a public policy response, as we approached the *Loneliness Connects Us* research we were troubled by particular aspects of the agenda.

## **<2> Troubling the youth loneliness agenda**

The UK Government's response to loneliness received international acclaim for, for example, appointing the first 'minister for loneliness' yet there are persuasive reasons for caution. In particular, we question the neoliberalising and individualising policy and practice response within the austerity policy context, and descriptions of loneliness as an epidemic, social plague and crisis.

## **<3> Neoliberalisation and Austerity**

In 2018, the UK Government released, 'A connected society: A strategy for tackling loneliness' (DCMS 2018). Reviewing the document it is apparent the strategy is written

548 within the familiar managerialising nomenclature. There are continual references to  
549 processes of ‘rolling out’, ‘scaling up’, ‘innovating’, ‘iterating’ and ‘joining-up.’ Innovation  
550 and its various cognate discourses and practices – social enterprise, social innovation, design  
551 thinking – are seductive in seemingly being able to solve any social problem (Selos & Mair  
552 2012). Under the New Labour and subsequent administrations public and children’s services  
553 have been the sites of transformative projects through collaboration, joined-up policy  
554 making and innovation (Clarke & Glendinning 2002; Davies 2009). This is not to claim that  
555 positive improvements are not possible or have not been made but profound social issues  
556 such as poverty, inequality, environmental degradation and youth loneliness persist, are  
557 exacerbated and emerge. There is a critique that such approaches are implicated in  
558 neoliberalising statecraft of extending market rationalities and strategies, and entrenching  
559 neoliberal reason as hegemonic common sense (Peck 2010).

560 Taking as an example a key component of this joined-up policy making for addressing  
561 loneliness, the ‘Family Test’ (DCMS 2018) compels policy makers to think of the  
562 consequences of any particular initiative in terms of the impact on loneliness. We may  
563 however question the weight which will be assigned to concerns related to loneliness. As  
564 the once ‘minister for loneliness’ Tracey Crouch MP (Minister for Civil Society) put it when  
565 questioned about the relationship between the loneliness test and decisions related to the  
566 austerity policy agenda:

567       One of the things that we have outlined in the strategy is looking at a sort of policy  
568       test for loneliness ... it’s not to say that those cuts wouldn’t happen but at least  
569       there would be an understanding of the consequence of those cuts... (Tracey  
570       Crouch MP cited in Stenning and Hall 2018:np)

571  
572 The remarkable acknowledgement that austerity was pursued ‘without an understanding of  
573 the consequence of those cuts’, if only on levels of connection, contextualises the impact of  
574 the disinvestment in young people’s lives and the capacities of the families, schools and  
575 communities that support them.

576 The government focus and investment on youth loneliness should be welcomed. It is not  
577 possible to calculate the investment in loneliness reduction strategies, as funding is spread  
578 between government departments, and national and local government or NHS Clinical

Commissioning Groups. We can identify £73.2 million of stated government expenditure on loneliness reduction that include young people, from a House of Commons Library Briefing Paper published on 5<sup>th</sup> August 2019 (Bellis 2019). This figure includes funding for a number of programmes that included but were not exclusively aimed at young people such as Building Connections Fund (£11m), the Community Minibus Fund (£25m), People's Postcode Lottery top-up grants (£5m), Health Lottery funding (£4m), 23 social prescribing projects (£4.5m), the DCMS and Co-op Foundation Spaces to Connect fund (£1.6m), and a Nesta 'Tech to Connect' Challenge (£1m). There is funding exclusively focused on young people with £100,000 for a Uniformed Youth Fund for research; £1 million invested in <sup>[1]</sup><sub>SEP</sub> the Centre for Youth Impact; a £5 million fund to pilot social impact bonds for young carers who are at the risk of becoming Not in Education, Employment or Training; and £6 million for two innovation programmes for care leavers. In addition we need to consider a series of projects such as a website for social prescribing and a DCMS campaign 'Let's talk Loneliness' (Bellis 2019).

The investment in youth loneliness must be understood, however, in relation to the massive disinvestment in public and youth services under the austerity regime, implemented by the Conservative-Liberal Democrat Coalition and Conservative administrations since 2010. A few headline figures from the effects of austerity on youth and community services: Youth services have suffered a 73% reduction in funding by £1billion since 2010, with 14,500 youth and community workers cut since 2008, and 750 youth centres closed since 2012 (Labour 2019). Local councils have sold 12,000 public spaces (Davies et al. 2019 cited in Hitchin and Shaw 2018). In addition to the decrease in money available to fund services, there has been an expansion of need with increasing numbers of families and young people living in poverty, reliant on food banks, and living in inadequate housing. There has been a 40% decrease in early intervention services for young people, and 7% increase in late intervention (Action for Children, National Children's Bureau & The Children's Society 2017). On this pattern, there will be a £2billion funding gap for youth and children's services by 2020 (The Local Government Association 2017).

Neoliberalising processes of accumulation by dispossession (Harvey 2007), in the reduction in state funding for public services, were accompanied by processes of cultural governance in the abjection and stigmatisation of specific groups. In this book we follow a tradition of



research that brings to light the profound ways in which capitalism works to determine those that count and those that do not, and the pervasive forms of cultural governance that engender consent through blame, shame and making identities and ways of living abject (Tyler 2013; Jensen & Tyler 2015). These processes of exclusion and shaming are aimed at various groups at different types from 'foreigners' or 'immigrants' to 'gays' or 'chavs.' Being excluded and made abject may be accompanied by isolation and loneliness but it also speaks to the ways in which groups and individual are included or excluded based on characteristics such as gender, sexuality, race or forms of social achievement or its absence. In a society that reproduces hierarchies of winners and losers, loneliness might be seen and felt as a personal failure.

### <3> Beyond the Individualisation of Loneliness

An important intersection between broader neoliberalising processes and youth loneliness research is the tendency to emphasise the individual. Neoliberalism(s) is famously an *ism* of the methodological, rational and utility-maximising *individual*. Of course, a focus on the individual occurs in conjunction with reforms to extend market dynamics, rationalities of competition, financialisation, and encroaching authoritarianism across society. We find in loneliness research, especially in the discipline of psychology, a broad concern with the individual. For example, leading definitions locate loneliness in individual and personal experience. For example, loneliness is,

'a situation experienced by *the individual* as one where there is an unpleasant or inadmissible lack of (quality of) certain relationships. This includes situations in which a number of existing relationships is smaller than considered desirable or admissible or situations where the intimacy one wishes for has not been realised. Thus, loneliness is seen to involve the manner in which *a person* experiences and evaluates his or her isolation and lack of communication with other people.' (de Jong-Gierveld 1987: 120)

Returning to the BBC Loneliness Experiment, as the cutting-edge of psychological research on youth loneliness, the study asked participants for actions that lonely people could take to reduce or manage feelings of loneliness. The 9 strategies they identified are:

1. Find distracting activities or dedicate time to work, study or hobbies
2. Join a social club or take up new social activities and pastimes

3. Change your thinking to make it more positive
4. Start a conversation with anyone
5. Talk to friends or family about your feelings
6. Look for the good in every person you meet
7. Take time to think why you feel lonely
8. Carry on and wait for the feeling to pass
9. Invite people to do things without fearing rejection

Reviewing this list it is apparent that these actions are sensible but they all relate to the *individual*, what a lonely individual can do, rather developing broader and expansive ways of thinking about how we might collectively re-imagine our relationships of connection, and belonging, being alone and enjoying solitude. There is of course nothing essentially incorrect about thinking of loneliness through the lens of the lonely individual with a ‘lack of (quality of) certain relationships.’ However, as the youth of today are growing up in a society profoundly transformed and enmeshed in neoliberalising dynamics we need ways of thinking loneliness within and beyond neoliberalism and the emphasis on the individual.

Another concern is that research often explores individual loneliness through a series of constructs that relate youth experience, official discourses and/or psychological processes. Young people’s experiences of loneliness are embedded within other official discourses concerning resilience or aspiration with, for example, loneliness amongst young homeless people said to be related to lack of resilience (e.g. Cleverley & Kidd 2011). Discourses and pedagogical programmes espouse resilience, character and grit which are no doubt common sense goods. Nevertheless they are implicated in neoliberalising agendas where the focus is to individualise social problems and responsabilise young people to overcome them (Burman 2018; Allen & Bull 2018).

Loneliness is understood in relation to psychological factors and effects such as hyper-vigilance (Qualter et al. 2013), maladaptive social cognition (Masi et al. 2011) and evolutionary drives such as the Re-Affiliation Motive which describes the adaptive drive to reconnect to social contact (Qualter et al. 2015). A significant focus of research on youth loneliness is to differentiate the triggers, risks and trajectories of loneliness amongst groups

of young people defined by characteristics such as living with autism (e.g. Zeedyk et al. 2016; Deckers, Muris & Roelofs 2017). Furthermore, psychological research separates between normative loneliness – a transient form of loneliness associated with the expected or normative transitions from childhood to adolescence and adulthood – and chronic loneliness – where loneliness is a lifelong condition for approximately 8-10% of the population (Victor & Yang 2011; Qualter et al. 2013). We are not so concerned to make this distinction. If loneliness is normative, associated with a relationship break up or in moving to a new town or job, it may still be experienced intensely as social pain and indeed may last for years if not a lifetime. This focus on intensity aligns with developments in the field to think beyond the focus on prevalence and frequency – is this the loneliest generation? – to a focus on the intensity and duration of experiences of loneliness (e.g. ONS 2018). Understanding young people’s experience of loneliness through psychological constructs is clearly useful but we aimed to look out from a youth perspective to unsettle and expand these approaches.

## <2> Loneliness as contagion and crisis

An alternative but equally problematic way of thinking of loneliness is to understand the connections between people, the sharing and emergence of loneliness, in terms of contagion and crisis. The idea that loneliness is contagious reflects the emotional contagion thesis from the fields of psychology and social psychology. Emotional contagion describes how,

‘[T]he loneliness in one person contributes to or causes the loneliness in others. The emotional, cognitive, and behavioral consequences of loneliness may contribute to the induction of loneliness... If loneliness is contagious, what if anything keeps the contagion in check?’ (Cacioppo, Fowler & Christakis 2010)

This quote captures the fears and anxieties emerging from the idea that loneliness is contagious. What keeps *it* in check? In the words of leading international psychology scholar, the late John Cacioppo,

‘If you’re lonely, you transmit loneliness, and then you cut the tie or the other person cuts the tie. But now that person has been affected, and they proceed to behave the same way. There is this cascade of loneliness that causes a disintegration of the social network.’ (Cacioppo 2009)

There is a concern in conceptualizing loneliness as emotional contagion and contagious: lonely young people become seen as vectors communicating loneliness amongst their social networks, as the mosquito is in the spread of malaria. Lonely young people who learn that loneliness is contagious may encounter the further feelings of shame, disconnection and doubt in not wishing to infect others with their loneliness and pain. Furthermore, young people might fear contact with potentially lonely young people lest they too *become* lonely. This approach to understanding loneliness creates an added layer of awkwardness and anxiety preventing young people from interpreting feelings of loneliness as a reminder to connect with others or indeed for other people to reach out and include them in social connection. In a more everyday sense, thinking of loneliness as contagion might interrelate to folk theories of social relations, such as the situation where popular young people do not want to be friends or seen with their uncool or unpopular peers because *uncool* is contagious.

The description of loneliness as a feature of prominent print and online media such as the BBC (Easton 2018), The Guardian (Khaleeli 2013), and Forbes (Howe 2019) all alert us to a loneliness epidemic. Rachel Reeves MP (Co-Chair of Jo Cox Loneliness Commission) defined loneliness as a ‘new social epidemic’ (Asthana 2017:np). According to the Dictionary of Epidemiology (Porta 2008:78-79), an epidemic is, ‘the occurrence in a community or region of cases of an illness, specific health-related behavior, or other health-related events clearly in excess of normal expectancy.’

The declaration of an epidemic is a typically powerful response that determines a problem as significant and locates it within the domain of public health knowledge practices. Naming loneliness as an epidemic is useful for policy makers and organisations to illuminate the gravity of the issue and to warrant increased investment in loneliness reduction programmes. It is important to recognise that declaring an epidemic, a crisis or an emergency is not a neutral act. In ‘Abnormal’, Foucault reminds us of the power relations at work in the historical declarations of plague, which is,

‘A political dream in which the plague is the rather marvellous moment when political power is exercised to the full... the reaction to plague is a positive reaction; it is a reaction of inclusion, observation, the formation of knowledge, the multiplication of

effects of power on the bases of the accumulation of observations and knowledge.'

(Foucault 1975:47-48)

As part of the loneliness agenda we have witnessed the apparently banal requests for new measures of loneliness and social connection. Further, after describing loneliness as 'a giant evil' of our time, Rachel Reeves MP calls for 'a new kind of welfare system that acts as a convenor, bringing people together to help them help themselves' (Asthana 2017:np). This is not necessarily problematic but Foucault's (1977, 1978) insights into the relationships between knowledge and power raise the question of how these might become yet more disciplinary regulatory apparatuses to transform young people into future citizens and workers in waiting (Rose 1999).

A corollary of loneliness as epidemic is the sense that we are amidst a crisis of loneliness. There are a series of superlative claims about the current state of youth loneliness. Britain was labelled the loneliness capital of Europe (Orr 2014). Young people are lonelier than any other generation (Hammond 2018a). No doubt this is a necessity of an increasingly competitive news context, in which journalists exaggerate the risks of diseases to attract attention. We might ask, however, whether or not we should care about the current cohort of lonely young people if the UK is only the fifth loneliest country in Europe, if the youth of a previous historical era were lonelier, or if 35-45 year old males are the loneliest of all.

Representing youth loneliness as an epochal crisis is a familiar discourse. Since the advent of industrialisation, however, youth and young people have been the focus of a series of moral panics (Cohen 1972; Goode & Ben-Yehuda 1994) and crisis discourses. Crisis follows crises whether gangs and violence, youth fitness for the Boer war or more recently educational underachievement, obesity, eating disorders, radicalisation, youth mental health, and knife crime (Green 2017). However much describing loneliness as a crisis feeds column inches and pronouncements in the policy sphere, and so can be perhaps productive and necessary in the short-term, we know that the trajectory is for the issue to be superseded by subsequent crises.

Our commitment throughout the research was to think to animate, attune to and seek to amplify the voices of young people in this growing national conversation. As productive as the existing research and advocacy had been in catalysing media and policy interest in youth loneliness, we were keen to illuminate potential biases and ultimately counter-productive

tendencies in the loneliness agenda. Thinking of loneliness as individualising, contagious and crisis in neoliberalising contexts or, indeed, failing to challenge and provide alternative ways of thinking and relating to loneliness is limiting. We were committed to maintain an openness, thinking loneliness in relation to alternative discourses, practices and imaginings of the relationship between individuals, communities, public services and the government. To reproduce the new as the old, youth loneliness as yet another social issue to be resolved through established practices and strategies would be a profound mistake and a missed opportunity.

### <1> Chapter 3: I'm new here: creating a new research project and a young person led research agenda

Gil Scott Heron's 2010 song 'I'm new here' was chosen by one of the young people we worked with for the 'Loneliness Playlist' we made at the start of the research. From then on, the old man's gentle voice and chords, which belong to the poet and musician Gil Scott Heron, accompanied the collaborative research project. It is poignant that this was an old man's voice saying 'I am new here.' The song takes the listener quickly to a sense of not knowing, which can be both a place of possibility and a lonely place. The old man is in a bar; he is alone; perhaps he has refused to change to fit in with a group, and has moved on. The listeners do not know, just as he does not know, and must ask for help to find out.

Whilst, as sociologists of youth claim, the lens of 'youth' does offer new insights into social relations, which are presented here, the underside of exploring this theme of 'newness' is a kind of uncertainty. This principle of 'not knowing' was an important accompaniment to the approaches to the subject of loneliness explored in this book, as such an agnostic stance pushes towards a deeper form of listening and engagement. This practice of uncertainty extended to not knowing ahead what value to place on the experience of loneliness, a consideration of the possibility that it might be pointing to something that is needed and that is of enormous value. Such uncertainty is an aspect of all relationality and yet it may be felt in particular ways when young. Loneliness may sing.

'Being New Here' took on a resonance beyond the experience of arriving new in a city or a bar. Everyone who gets to the age of 13 has never been 13 before. Everyone who reaches an age deemed 'adult' has never been adult before. This has been termed (and debated and

800 deconstructed) as 'transition' in the youth studies literature. Ageing and being new and  
801 making significant transitions continues to be the case throughout life, and there are a  
802 number of significant life transitions. Nevertheless, the moment of experiencing loneliness  
803 alone for the first time is a moment in which possible responses are also shaped for the first  
804 time. These responses, though experienced personally, are not formed merely individually  
805 but are the repertoire of a generation, accompanying that generation throughout life and  
806 extending and constraining the possible responses available to everyone. It has therefore  
807 been important to us to recognise wherever we can in what follows what is new and being  
808 added to our understandings of loneliness and connection, specifically through young  
809 people's engagement with the theme. Because the theme of loneliness was at first  
810 identified as a concern in relation to elders, there is much new to hear and see here.

811 Key transitions associated with young people include: primary school/secondary  
812 school/college/University transitions; school/work transitions; leaving home/living  
813 independently transitions; dating/seeking/forming adult relationships transitions. If and  
814 when these ordinary and complex experiences are accompanied by difficulties that have  
815 persisted since childhood (especially from the earliest years) the likelihood of experiencing  
816 more than momentary loneliness intensifies. This intensification is also the case with forms  
817 of change or loss that can occur at any time of life, such as bereavement, parental  
818 separation or divorce, homelessness or moving home, change of schools, break up of  
819 relationships or friendships, or illness.

820 In this chapter, we explain the processes of collaborative and youth led research on which  
821 the book as a whole draws. We present the framing of a new research project by a group  
822 made up of academic researchers and young researchers who were experts through lived



experience. It was a project developed out of the traditions of critical participatory action research committed to social justice (Fine 2016) and informed by our understandings of youth work methods as socio-cultural animation and accompaniment (Batsleer 2008). This creative process of research underlies therefore both the qualitative findings about loneliness presented throughout the book and the uncertainty which accompanies them.

## **<2> A new research project**

The project ran from November 2016 to July 2019, and developed through four phases: One, growing the research. We recruited 14 young people as part of the core research team, coordinated by a paid lead youth co-researcher who was employed by 42<sup>nd</sup> Street. Through the Carousel of Methods we explored loneliness and developed a co-research agenda for youth loneliness. Two, we continued the Carousel of Methods and experimented with methods for data collection. Three, two arts producers joined the project to develop 'Missing' an immersive theatre experience that was performed 15 times. Four, we explored the legacy transitions from youth co-research to youth social action by hosting a youth summit and developing the legacy project with young people on FOMO or the Fear of Missing Out.

In the first stage of the research, the core group of researchers for the project met on a weekly basis, getting to know one another as well as exploring and creating what would become the key research questions. During this phase of the research we workshopped and explored a number of philosophical and cultural resources and played with a series of possible approaches to the study. Some of these are presented in this chapter. The discussion was not limited to scientific evidence, though in an early session we shared our initial literature review with the research participants. We drew widely on the range of

sources which have been presented in the first chapter. The words of novelists such as Virginia Woolf (2003), Olivia Laing (2017) and Sara Maitland (2014), the theologian Paul Tillich (2010) and the psychoanalyst Anthony Storr (1989), also all made appearances in these workshops. At the same time, these early activities enabled the research team to become at ease with one another and with a potentially difficult topic. From the very beginning we built into this study the often-noted synergy (Gormally & Coburn 2016; de St Croix 2016) between methods used in group building in community education and youth work projects and the development of creative engagement as a practice of research and enquiry.

We developed and drew on a carousel of research methods. The idea behind this was to enable the whole research team to explore research and artistic practices that might develop a series of methods to enable conversations that matter with other young people about youth loneliness. The research team developed an iterative and expansive series of encounters, inquiries and dialogues with loneliness, through a series of practices. The first session focused on the practice of interviewing and practical research ethics. The second session shared some of our findings from the literature and used community philosophy (Tiffany et al. 2013) to encourage talking, listening, reflecting and thinking together. We then ran subsequent sessions on making DIY robots for ‘parallel’ or sitting-alongside conversations, explored loneliness together through ludic methods that moved the research out into the street, listened to music and discussed films that gave volume or voice to thoughts and feelings of loneliness, and met immersive theatre practitioners working on productions of short plays about loneliness. We co-produced two radio programmes, we ate together, we discussed research evidence and shared quotes from our sessions elsewhere, and we co-produced scenario-based workshops with other young people. There is not space

870 here to detail each of these interventions but the intention of the carousel was for the  
871 youth co-researchers to engage with different media, modalities, methods and  
872 methodologies that sought to open up different ways of encountering, thinking and  
873 experiencing loneliness.

874 A second element of the carousel reflected the changing relationships and locus of the  
875 project among the research team and the various points of entry and exit for young people  
876 to participate. We aimed to respect the differential participation of young people that  
877 participated as co-researchers throughout the project alongside more temporary and  
878 peripheral encounters as young people joined the project as an activity for university  
879 assignments, to 'hang out', or as *participants* in interviews, workshops or discussions  
880 following the performance of Missing.

881 In what follows we show some of the ways in which research questions were generated in  
882 the first months of the research that enabled us to probe more deeply into the experience  
883 of loneliness. We briefly present four of the methods we used. These are: a Robot Story  
884 Board; a Community Philosophy Discussion; a Street Walk at Dusk, and a Loneliness Play  
885 List.

## 886 <2> A robot story board

887 The research team began to explore playful methods in an early activity led by Hwa Jung  
888 Young, who guided us in the making of small battery driven robots, using ready to hand  
889 materials, in this case plastic water bottles and other junk materials. We worked in two  
890 teams to make the robots, and attached a small motor propeller to each of them, using felt  
891 tip pens. Then we sent them to do battle with each other, and in the process designed a  
892 game. This activity was based on one developed as part of games workshops in galleries and

893 museums education; it emphasises the active contribution of participants in design whilst  
894 showing the significance of binary choices and pathways which then engender and inspire  
895 creativity in such design processes.

896 This robot-making brought connections to the surface through a shared practical activity  
897 which most participants felt very at home with. In the two teams, the robots were created  
898 and named; it was from the point that they were inevitably sent to do battle with each  
899 other that the story of the lonely robot first emerged.

900 The creation of story boards is a staple of much socially engaged youth arts practice. The  
901 principle of narrative and scenario building came to underpin a great deal of the research  
902 process in this project and we will return to this theme in depth later in the book when we  
903 discuss the play 'Missing', which was created as an integral part of the project. Here, the  
904 story-making activity emerged from a principle of game design based on binary choices. The  
905 'lonely robot' would move through a particular space making choices randomly (through the  
906 spin of the robot) at each point. In the case of this robot, the choice often became between  
907 one of seeking connection or seeking separation. The scene chosen was a local park,  
908 recently renewed and made habitable again, in an area where many people live in bedsits in  
909 what were once grand Victorian family houses and are now houses in multiple occupation.  
910 The choices faced by the character who moved through the game included: whether to  
911 leave a club late at night with a friend or to leave alone; whether or not to walk alone  
912 through the park at night; whether or not to buy pizza; whether or not to share it; whether  
913 or not to take it home to eat; whether or not to sit on a bench to eat it; and whether or not  
914 to accept someone else sitting on the bench or to move to another bench to sit alone.

915 The use of story-boarding and scenario building as a method has been recognised by socially  
916 engaged arts practitioners as allowing provisionality and a range of potential identifications  
917 for those taking part. Although there is a strong tendency – which can only be resisted if it is  
918 brought to awareness – to reproduce powerful cultural narratives and ‘official’ scripts, -  
919 skilful practitioners can bring alternative scenes and possibilities to light, with the possibility  
920 of new identifications and dis-identifications happening for those taking part. The robot  
921 story worked to distance the experience. No one involved was claiming to be a robot after  
922 all. Following the robot game, the research team developed a process of scenario building to  
923 invite stories about youth loneliness. A series of cards with potential young people involved  
924 (girl, aged 10; boy aged 17; and so on), some places (a school canteen, a club, a gym, a  
925 football match and so on), times (a birthday; Christmas; early in the morning; a weekend),  
926 and an object (a pair of headphones; a pair of trainers; a phone). With every iteration of the  
927 process, new ideas were suggested and included in the materials for scenario building.

928 The robot story resonated strongly with the experience of one of the research team who  
929 lived continually with night waking and would often choose to be alone in preference to  
930 being with others, including at times finding outdoor spaces safer than indoor spaces. This  
931 playful engagement allowed the pain associated with loneliness to emerge, but also the  
932 reality that loneliness may be hard but is not necessarily the hardest experience to be faced.  
933 It became clear that loneliness may cause anxiety and lead people not to seek support, ask  
934 for help or offer friendship, particularly when loneliness is aligned with issues of mental  
935 health and surrounding stigma. It was from conversations on themes such as these that  
936 issues of *Asking for Help and Offering Connection* took on significance for the research.

937   **<2> Community philosophy**

938   Sara Maitland (2014: 30) writes In *How to be Alone*, ‘...recently ‘loner’ has become media  
939   shorthand for ‘psychotic mass murderer or sex fiend.’ If you look up ‘loner’ on Wikipedia  
940   you will find this alphabetical list of related terms:

941	Avoidant personality disorder	<i>Hermit</i>
942	Autism	Hikikomori
943	<i>Byronic hero</i>	<i>Introversion</i>
944	Dysfunctional family	Loneliness
945	Lone Wolf (trait)	Social phobia
946	Major depressive disorder	Social rejection
947	Misanthropy	<i>Solitude</i>
948	Recluse	Tragic Hero
949	Schizoid personality disorder	

950   I have put into italics the four terms that do not correlate with ‘sad, mad and bad’, although  
951   the context of the list raises questions even about them.’

952   This was one on the stimulus materials we used for the Community Philosophy session.

953   An engagement with philosophical enquiry has been a consistent focus of the forms of  
954   conversation which youth and community workers have hoped to engage in (Young 2007)  
955   and there is synergy with current research preoccupations with ontoepistemology (Cutter-  
956   Mackenzie-Knowles & Rousell 2018), deep questions of value and purpose, and a  
957   commitment to share the terms and guiding principles of research with research

participants. Radical research practice has often been committed to enabling less powerful participants' critical knowledges to emerge, and there is a strong current emphasis on the significance of the non-verbal, the affective and the more than rational as vehicles of knowledge (Ivinson & Renold 2019). There are also a number of approaches in youth work to enquiry through dialogue which have been built from models of phronesis (Young 2007; Ord 2014) and Socratic Dialogue (Banks 2018), or which have taken ideas developed in the Philosophy for Children movement and adapted them for youth work (Tiffany et al. 2013).

The process of Community Philosophy involved an initial presentation and exploration of ideas concerning loneliness from a range of writers including poets, essayists, psychoanalysts and historians. The purpose of this session was to unsettle any taken for granted notions that we held concerning our existing knowledge, for example that we knew in a satisfactory way what loneliness was and why it was a bad thing. We considered the importance that has been assigned to solitude as a form of being in many discussions of creativity and spirituality, and questioned the stigma associated with loneliness. This theme has become central to our approach in this study. Solitude remains a very important resource; it is possible that loneliness can be thought of as a pathology of solitude, as Professor Barbara Taylor suggests in naming her research project 'Pathologies of Solitude.'

Following the unsettling of assumptions about what we know to be true, researchers were then invited to develop their own questions which were continually investigated in the following sessions. These were the questions which emerged: What good can come from loneliness? What do we owe others if we choose solitude? What does it mean to be sane in an insane society? What makes a good friend? How do we know that we feel the same as others when we feel lonely? Do you choose solitude or does solitude/loneliness get forced

981 on you? Why do we judge people for being alone? Is it better to be without friends and safe  
982 or with friends and vulnerable? Do people use their friends' social media or online forums as  
983 a substitute for physical interaction and does it work? Where does loneliness begin? Is this a  
984 friendship or do I still feel lonely? How can we tell if someone is a friend? Can you actually  
985 choose friends? Are ties and bonds of friendship natural rather than chosen?

986 The question '*Does loneliness connect us?*' became an overarching theme. It very rapidly  
987 became clear that it would be impossible to separate the discussion of isolation and  
988 connection from wide ranging social and political issues. Youth work traditions concerned  
989 with supporting young people's discernment about relationships and what enables  
990 flourishing are embedded in practices that encourage the widest possible questioning of  
991 social relations. This builds on the critical traditions of Participatory Action Research (Fine  
992 ,2016 ), whilst taking a distance from the ways in which those traditions and their associated  
993 technologies have become commodified. There are questions about the kind of threats  
994 which (young) people encounter and which cause isolation; about practices of distinction  
995 and judgement which place people outside of social acceptability; and about imagining the  
996 good grounds for connection, flourishing and friendship and the kind of social relations  
997 which enable and constrain this.

998 Youth loneliness needs to be considered within the broader context of how young people  
999 are growing up in conditions of austerity, precarity, inequality and the competitive pressure  
1000 to achieve. Responding to youth loneliness means developing new forms of solidarity,  
1001 belonging and friendship.



## 1002 <2> A street walk at dusk

1003 It was a December evening and the city was dark, although here in the centre of the city it is  
1004 never dark and the streetlights give off an orange glow. Jana Wendler, an urban geographer  
1005 and specialist in playful methods, supported the session with an introduction to walking as a  
1006 method: walking and following according to a rule invented and agreed by the group who  
1007 are walking together, noticing and then talking. This method was introduced to the group  
1008 as one of a range of 'playful research methods' with which the research team can engage.  
1009 There is a good deal of interest currently in our wider research community in the Education  
1010 and Social Research Institute at Manchester Metropolitan University in both playful  
1011 methods and in walking (Springgay & Truman 2019). These are seen as ways to unsettle and  
1012 to open up aspects of experience that more word-centred methods occlude. Such research  
1013 methods are familiar with the figure of the flaneuse/flaneur and the way they move through  
1014 urban space and know it through movement. Less familiar perhaps is the youth and  
1015 community work practice of detached work or street work. This is a good example of finding  
1016 synergy between research approaches and established approaches to a professional  
1017 practice, youth work, in which contact, connection and conversations are established on a  
1018 voluntary basis, often in spaces which young people have chosen and defined as their own.  
1019 Historically these were 'the streets' and instead of seeing youth work as a practice of  
1020 'getting young people off the streets', detached youth work stayed there with young people  
1021 and at their invitation, and negotiated the terms of engagement with them. It is much  
1022 harder now, under contemporary conditions of surveillance, to see the streets as a free  
1023 space or to identify the spaces which young people claim as their own, away from the  
1024 surveillance of adults, but the principal for practice remains significant: young people bring

1025 their own terms to the engagement and collaboration. They are not empty vessels, any  
1026 more than is the researcher or youth worker.

1027 The team of researchers divided into pairs and each pair made a rule. For example, to follow  
1028 from one light to the next one we saw. Or to always take a left turn. Having agreed their  
1029 rules, the pairs followed them without talking and then, at the end of the time, returned to  
1030 the project base and talked together about what they had experienced and how this  
1031 connected to the theme of loneliness.

1032 As it turned out, it was a moment of connecting with the edges of experience. The project  
1033 base is on a busy main road through the centre of the city, but it is also on the edge of a new  
1034 housing development for young professionals, from which, notoriously, social housing  
1035 tenants have been excluded. So we walked into darker spaces and into lighter ones, and  
1036 noticed people in a supermarket, in a café bar, and through the enormous glass frontage of  
1037 a Virgin Extra gym. We noticed other people shopping on their own or in pairs, at the gym  
1038 alone on the cross trainer, and we imagined their lives in these mundane activities and  
1039 talked about our own. We also noticed the time of day and wondered if the transitions  
1040 between one kind of engagement in life and another were potentially lonely moments. We  
1041 were caught up in wondering about time and loneliness and connection, the temporal  
1042 rhythms not only of the day but of the year. We were doing this from the outside looking in,  
1043 and feeling different. From this experience and others, we began to name and explore the  
1044 way *a sense of difference* is present in this space. This began to open up a conversation  
1045 about the many forms of *queer* and what they would contribute to the study.

1046 **<2> The loneliness play list**

1047       Green Day – Boulevard of Broken Dreams

1048            Let Live – Copper Coloured Quiet

1049            Deadmau5 & Imogen Heap – telemiscommunications

1050            Bon Iver – Roslyn & Majid Jordan – A place like this

1051            Gil Scot Heron – I’m new here

1052            Radiohead – Creep

1053            Ennio Morricone – Gabriel's Oboe

1054    These were the tracks chosen and shared, at the suggestion of the younger researchers,  
1055    which spoke to them of loneliness. As the conversation developed in the first phase of the  
1056    research, ideas for sources of enquiry emerged in the course of conversation, and one of  
1057    these was the loneliness play list. It was from this list that three important themes for the  
1058    rest of the research process emerged.

1059    One was the possibility of non-verbal expression of separation and connection. This was first  
1060    heard in the tones of a solo oboe from the film track for The Mission, a 1986 historical epic  
1061    film about a heroic Jesuit whose oboe playing at a moment of life threatening danger forms  
1062    a connection with the indigenous South American people he has come to serve. Listening, in  
1063    this early session, to the oboe playing alone out of a moment of despair and signalling a life-  
1064    saving possibility of connection, and hearing the solo oboe’s distance from the orchestra,  
1065    resonated through many subsequent recognitions of a deep connection not best expressed  
1066    in words.

1067    The second important recognition was of the importance of new technologies and  
1068    platforms. The research team consistently shared and engaged with a wider public on a  
1069    range of platforms, including Twitter and on podcasts. The creation of this music playlist was

the first of a number of such compilations during the course of the project. We found that the use of sharing platforms – to discuss topics ranging from music tracks through musical theatre to superheroes, comedy, and DIY information – is a fundamental means of communication among young people.

Thirdly, the framing of ‘loneliness’ as a particular preoccupation at this lifestage was brought into sharp focus by the lyrical content of the chosen songs: romantic relationships, uncertainty about the future, both personal and planetary, bordering on depression and a sense of meaninglessness and purposelessness. This sense of the connection between loneliness and ‘youth’ came to be particularly encapsulated in the phrase ‘I’m New Here’ from the Gil Scott Heron song quoted at the beginning of this chapter.

## **<2> A youth-led research agenda**

At the end of this initial period of building a research team, the following focuses and themes had therefore been identified to take into the second phase of the research. The following is how this was encapsulated in our research notes at the time made together at the end of a group session.

- **Being 13:** The transition from childhood to becoming a teenager can be awkward, when it is difficult to both relate to other young people and have conversations with adults.
- **I’m new here:** Transience is a feature of many young people’s lives, whether that is moving schools or when families move or split up, or moving across countries and seeking asylum – all of which can exacerbate youth loneliness.
- **Being different/queer youth:** There are many forms of difference that can create vulnerability to isolation and loneliness and prevent a feeling of belonging. (In this

1093 study, the issue of how this loneliness accompanies people exploring non-normative  
1094 gender and sexuality was particularly highlighted and this enabled other ways that  
1095 difference is picked on to emerge.)

1096 • **Online spaces and connection:** Social media is implicated in discussions of loneliness  
1097 and in broader experiences of being young. We recognise the pressures and  
1098 constraints as well as the possibilities of social media for forming nourishing  
1099 relationships.

1100 • **Asking for help, offering connection:** Loneliness can make people feel awkward and  
1101 anxious and may cause young people not to seek support, ask for help or offer  
1102 friendship, particularly where loneliness is aligned to issues of mental health and the  
1103 surrounding stigma.

1104 • **The politics of loneliness and friendship:** We assert that youth loneliness needs to  
1105 be considered within the broader context of how young people are growing up in  
1106 conditions of austerity, precarity, inequality and the competitive pressures to  
1107 achieve as an individual. We believe that responding to youth loneliness requires  
1108 developing new forms of solidarity, belonging and friendship.

1109 These themes were used to guide the enquiry and were supplemented by some broader  
1110 concerns as the research developed:

1111 • **Transitions:** This reflects the many painful stories of *first* transitions - the first  
1112 relationship breakdown or the first time away from home - and how these can leave  
1113 young people vulnerable to isolation and loneliness.

1114 • **Trauma, shame and silence:** Loneliness is often accompanied and entangled in  
1115 trauma, shame and silence, especially when young people are trapped in coming to

1116 terms with a painful past and feeling fearful of contact with others or not worthy of  
1117 present positive connections.

1118 • **Questioning contagion:** We questioned the focus on contagion in popular reporting  
1119 and analyses of loneliness, such as the use of the words ‘plague’ or ‘epidemic’ to  
1120 describe youth loneliness.

1121 The research project then moved into a period of wider engagement with young people  
1122 across the North West of England. The following table shows the range of engagement the  
1123 project had in the second phase of the research.

1124

1125 **Table 1: Forms of youth engagement during phase two**

Youth Group	Form of engagement	Numbers	Ages
42nd Street Core Group	Each One Teach One	15	11-25
42nd Street Groups	Individual Conversations	10	16-20
Stoke Youth Project	Group Scenario Building	6	10-12
Manchester Youth Club	Scenario Building	10	15-16
Youth Forum Manchester	Group Discussion	5	15-16
LGBT* Group	Scenario Building	8	16-24

1126

1127 In the important third phase (discussed in Chapter 12), we toured a play called ‘Missing’ in a  
1128 variety of locations around the British Isles. ‘Missing’ was an immersive performance based  
1129 on a ‘missing persons’ scenario, in which a young woman with an apparently ordinary life  
1130 goes missing and participants who take part in the performance are given the task of finding  
1131 her. Because of its importance it has a chapter of the book almost to itself, but it needs to  
1132 be said here that this engagement with young people in each of the four jurisdictions of the  
1133 UK greatly deepened and extended our understanding of loneliness. Many of the findings of  
1134 the subsequent chapters and the shape of the current text (which is based on our project  
1135 report) came into focus as a result of this experience of the immersive performance. The  
1136 four youth projects that we visited (which are described in detail in Chapter 11) were in  
1137 Rhyl, Norwich and Great Yarmouth, Ballymena and Glasgow. They could not have been  
1138 more hospitable to our perhaps somewhat strange request to bring a play and discuss  
1139 loneliness with them.

1140 The fourth and final phase of the research was to develop a legacy project. We began  
1141 working with the housing association assembly to explore how an inchoate youth state  
1142 might engage youth loneliness. We started working with the new group of 12 young people  
1143 prior to the conclusion of the research with the original group of youth co-researchers, to  
1144 ensure there was sufficient continuity with the original research but opportunity for the  
1145 new group to create a sense of contribution and ownership of the process they were  
1146 inheriting. For example, they participated in an immersive performance of the play Missing  
1147 and attended the *Loneliness Connects Us* youth summit. The housing association group  
1148 decided to focus on online spaces and loneliness, and in particular FOMO or the ‘Fear of  
1149 Missing Out.’ The *Loneliness Connects Us* research had explored the pressures imposed on

1150 young people through an engagement with social media. The project is described in Chapter  
1151 9.

1152 In subsequent chapters, the findings which emerged from these studies are presented. All  
1153 of the original themes discussed earlier remain and can be found clearly responded to in  
1154 particular chapters. The issue of the politics of loneliness and finding a new narrative for  
1155 loneliness is addressed throughout.

1156 Use of the carousel of methods means that the methods we used and the evidence we  
1157 generated in this co-research project have taken multiple forms; in some the verbal and  
1158 narrative forms of expression become foregrounded, and the work of co-production is  
1159 evident. In others, the non-verbal and relational experience of the research process is to the  
1160 fore: it has been a matter of attuning to loneliness and friendship, prior to any verbal  
1161 expression. In this book, the emphasis is strongly on the voices and new narratives that the  
1162 project generated, but we hope the affective impact of these creative methods can also be  
1163 sensed in what follows.

1164

1165

1166

1167



## **<1> Section I: The social conditions of loneliness**

The experience of loneliness and the accompanying movement from loneliness to the valuing of solitude was an aspect of the development of individualism in Modernity, and associated with Romanticism in particular. The most famous poem of the Romantic movement, Wordsworth's Daffodils, once learned by heart by children as a condition for being permitted to leave school, begins with loneliness - 'I wandered, lonely, as a cloud...' but ends with a 'flash upon that inward eye, which is the bliss of solitude.' So loneliness can be understood as a ubiquitous presence in modernity. But we are not concerned here simply with the loneliness which accompanies modern life and which can become, with properly artful or skilful attention, a practice of solitude. The rehearsal of this undoubted truth should not prevent the recognition that there are specific social conditions of inequality that make access to social opportunities and social connection difficult and loneliness more likely. The social conditions of poverty, of disconnected small towns and of competitive and individualistic education systems are the focus of the following three chapters and we argue that 'youth loneliness' cannot be addressed apart from an understanding of these conditions. Most discussion of loneliness has focussed on individual experiences of social isolation and the consequences of this for the personal experience of loneliness, such as the development of hyper-vigilance and the risks to mental health. However the significance of poverty as a theme meant that our starting point instead became the social conditions which promote isolation and which may precipitate loneliness. It was therefore necessary to consider unequal or unjust social conditions and to encounter the emotional field that developed within them rather than seeing loneliness simply as a characteristic of individuals. There are instead lonely times, lonely places, lonely

circumstances. One aspect of social conditions that required exploration is ‘anomie’: the sense of deep disconnection from others that arises from social isolation and an actual lack of daily contact with other people. There are people who can go days without speaking to anyone, often as a consequence of poverty. A second was the emotional impact of poverty. Over and over again we encountered a sense of shame associated with poverty. We argue here, following Imogen Tyler’s work (Tyler 2013), that the dynamics of this emotional field are shaped by a practice and process of social abjection and by responses to it: the process in which populations are rendered disposable and seen as rubbish, and their responses to such rubbishing, which include both internalisation and resistance. These dynamics are discussed both in Chapter Four on Loneliness and Poverty and Chapter Five on Being an Outsider. This chapter also puts into question the issue of ‘community’ and the negative aspects of ‘community’ for those who are positioned as outsiders and explores spatial aspects of loneliness. The emotional dynamics discussed in Chapter Five, those associated with the education system, are different – more concerned with individualism and competition – but are all pervasive as the education system affects all young people.

## **<1> Chapter 4: Loneliness and poverty**

In one form or another, a discussion of the impact of poverty on young people's lives emerged in every setting the research team engaged in.

In recent years the proportion of children living in poverty has been rising. These rises have been documented in great detail by the UK government-funded Economic and Social Research Council's Poverty and Social Exclusion team (Dorling 2018), as well as by the Joseph Rowntree Foundation. Peter Townsend, the sociologist who did so much to advance our understanding of poverty and its relationship to wider society, was also one of the founders of the Child Poverty Action Group. In 1979 Townsend defined poverty as follows, highlighting that poverty is about a lack of resource. This resource is certainly financial, but it also includes a lack of access to good education and healthcare and to positive and trustful communities:

Individuals, families and groups in the population can be said to be in poverty when they lack resources to obtain the type of diet, participate in the activities and have the living conditions and amenities which are customary, or at least widely encouraged and approved, in the societies in which they belong. (Townsend, 1979)

The Joseph Rowntree Foundation (JRF) is a highly respected think tank that presents evidence about poverty in the UK to policy makers. Their definition of poverty is (JRF 2016), 'when a person's resources are well below their minimum needs, including the need to take part in society.' In 2008, the JRF published the Minimum Income Standard (MIS) – the

1230 benchmark of minimum needs based on what goods and services members of the public  
1231 think are required for an adequate standard of living. This includes food, clothes and shelter;  
1232 it also includes what we need in order to have the opportunities and choices necessary to  
1233 participate in society. According to the JRF, today in England there are 4.1 million children  
1234 classified as poor (JRF 2018). This means that they are unable to take part in the norms of  
1235 society, their parents or guardians are unable to purchase items which the majority of the  
1236 population consider to be necessities. Very often, for example, children are unable to take  
1237 part in relatively cheap school trips or have a birthday party because of the lack of money in  
1238 their lives. A lack of adequate financial resources is the decisive characteristic of poverty.  
1239 Many studies and activist campaigns record the struggles involved in living in poverty: the  
1240 constant decisions about what to do without, the choice between necessities, such as  
1241 heating or food, the inability to provide clothing or shoes that last for children who are  
1242 growing all the time.

1243 However, it is hard for those who experience these difficulties to identify themselves as  
1244 poor, especially in relation to the experience of poverty on a global scale. The Beveridge  
1245 Report (1942), the foundation document of the Welfare State, described the five Evils - to  
1246 be countered through the state provision of welfare services – as Want, Disease, Ignorance,  
1247 Squalor and Idleness. It is Want that is our focus here: a lack of ability to provide. In 1945,  
1248 there was a clear link between Want and Idleness (lack of work) and one of the key  
1249 economic drivers in the postwar period was the commitment to full employment. Now, of  
1250 the 13 million at the bottom of the UK's income distribution, more than half are in work.  
1251 According to Danny Dorling (2018), what this means is that the tax and benefits system,  
1252 which props up the incomes of the relatively poor, is also propping up the incomes of the

1253 shareholders in the companies that pay too little. In-work poverty is as significant as  
1254 poverty among those living on benefits.

1255 According to the Child Poverty Action Group (2019), on the basis of research conducted by  
1256 the Institute for Public Policy Research in March 2019, the annual poverty statistics for the  
1257 UK found:

- 1258 • “The number of poor children in working families is up from 67% to **70%**.
- 1259 • **53%** of poor children are aged under 5 (up from 51%) - that’s more than 2 million  
1260 children.
- 1261 • **200,000** more children live in absolute poverty after housing costs (shortened to  
1262 ‘AHC’ hereafter).
- 1263 • The number of children in poverty is 4.1 million (AHC). That’s 30% of UK children  
1264 below the poverty line.
- 1265 • The risk of poverty for children in families with 3 or more children is up from 32% in  
1266 2012 to 43%.”

1267 This change and worsening of poverty in the UK, and its presence in the lives of  
1268 those in paid work, does not need to be attributed to the malaise of neoliberalism. It  
1269 is a direct result of deliberate policies: the four year freeze on children’s benefits  
1270 alone (child benefit and child elements in tax credits and universal credit) will lead to  
1271 average losses of £240 per year for families with children and will result in 100,000  
1272 more children in poverty by 2023-24. Over the decade from 2010 to 2020, child  
1273 benefit – a vital lifeline for families struggling to make ends meet – will have lost  
1274 almost a quarter of its value simply because it has not been updated as prices have  
1275 risen.

For many, the losses will be much greater because of the freeze in help with housing costs and other benefits, and the impact of the benefit cap and two-child limit for those claiming support. These controls on the poorest sections of the population are also profoundly stigmatising and contribute strongly to a culture in which poor people are held responsible for their own poverty. Whereas in earlier periods such social conditions were viewed as a social issue in need of social redress (which might take a variety of forms), the most powerful framings are now of responsibilisation and abjection, in which those who experience poverty are seen as the source of their own misery. While the experience of social abjection has been discussed in relation to shame, it has less often been noticed that this is accompanied by loneliness. This is the focus of the findings we present in this chapter.

In a study undertaken for the Office of National Statistics (ONS 2018), it was reported that children who receive free school meals report experiencing loneliness more often:

Children who received free school meals were more likely to report feeling lonely. Of those children receiving free school meals, 27.5% reported that they were often lonely, while 5.5% of children who did not receive free school meals reported the same.

There was also a noticeable difference in whether children received free school meals and reporting low levels of loneliness. Just over one-third of children who received free school meals reported that they were “hardly ever or never” lonely, compared with nearly two-thirds of children who did not receive free school meals (ONS 2018)

1297 One sociologist who has foregrounded the emotional impact of poverty is Tracy Shildrick,  
1298 who analyses the juggling acts for families on the 'low pay, no pay' cycle. These juggling acts  
1299 themselves required strict routines described in detail by those Shildrick interviewed:

1300 I walk to my eldest daughter's house and I'll ask her to give me a meal. I go to  
1301 Sainsbury's about 9 o'clock and look for all the reduced items. Buy a loaf of bread  
1302 and it'll last you for four days. Reduced eggs, they'll last you a week ... I'll have  
1303 vegetables with rice, bread and egg. (Amanda, 48) (Shildrick et al, 2010)

1304 Shildrick writes of the way debt impacts on household living standards because of the  
1305 failures of the benefit system or during low-paid, insecure employment. Strategies like those  
1306 described by Amanda were carried out and experienced over the long-term and across  
1307 periods in and out of work. Their impact was sustained over long periods of time and felt by  
1308 children who learned never to ask, for example, for items which schools might suggest  
1309 parents bought or contributed to. Borrowing from family and friends was a regular and  
1310 necessary experience for the majority. Yet families experiencing such stresses rejected the  
1311 term 'poverty' because of the shame associated with it (Shildrick 2018).

1312 In every context in which the researchers engaged, the impact of poverty was highlighted by  
1313 young people and youth workers. It was discussed in terms of a sheer lack of financial  
1314 resources, and the inability to make ends meet, but also in terms of physical isolation, drug  
1315 abuse, isolated and uncared for towns and a common experience of poor mental health. In  
1316 what follows we highlight how all these experiences together can be considered as  
1317 constructing the framework for the experience of loneliness among many young people.

1318 **<2> Poverty: no money**

1319 'It's terrible if you see that everyone's having a party online and you can't afford to  
1320 go because you can't even afford to buy sausage rolls. You have to go to the food  
1321 bank but you aren't going to go to the foodbank because it's so undignified. We've  
1322 seen that a lot.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1323 The inability to make ends meet has become highly visible as a result of the growth of  
1324 foodbanks across the UK, especially since 2014, with the trends set to continue as child  
1325 poverty grows. It has been less widely noted that not all areas have had the resources to  
1326 organise foodbanks, nor that during school holidays many food banks run out of supplies.  
1327 Nor is the fact often discussed that the shame associated with needing to use a foodbank is  
1328 so strong that many people simply refuse to do so. The emotional cost of finding reasons  
1329 not to attend, for example, a small party organised by friends, or a family gathering where  
1330 everyone brings along something to eat, when even something as basic as a small packet of  
1331 sausage rolls is beyond your means, is many layered. It includes both the pain of being  
1332 unable to afford even the cheapest brand, and the impact of the felt need to disguise the  
1333 reality. These are the layers of feeling in which loneliness is built. These are also the  
1334 conditions in which young people move out of connection. When young people or their  
1335 families are unable to take part in everyday life and the small celebrations and get-togethers  
1336 that others take for granted this leads to shaming and isolation and loneliness.

1337 Pilots of changes to the welfare system were taking place during the period of this research:

1338 'This area was a test area for Universal Credit. They feel like the guinea pigs of the  
1339 system. I think they thought, if we can make it work round here, [then] we can make  
1340 it work anywhere. People have been going six weeks without any money and all



1341           you've got round here is your family, and if you haven't got your family or they've  
1342           split up or something, you've got nothing.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1343   Universal Credit has now been widely shown to have had extremely damaging  
1344   consequences. It is a UK system that has been introduced with the stated aim of simplifying  
1345   working age benefits and incentivising paid work. It reduces six previous benefits to one,  
1346   and the payment of rent is included in this same payment. It has been estimated that 3.2  
1347   million families have lost £48 a week (the total monthly payment for a couple is currently  
1348   just less than £500). It is paid in arrears, leaving many people facing debt from the beginning  
1349   of the scheme. For those struggling with poverty of this kind, the sense of being 'guinea pigs  
1350   of the system' is acute and expresses clearly the sense of powerlessness and frustration that  
1351   is endemic in many of the poorest neighbourhoods in the UK.

1352   The idea of the 'guinea pig' stands for a non-human creature used to test the efficiency of a  
1353   new drug or process. Universal Credit is a new process that is designed to cure an alleged  
1354   problem: that of an overspend of public money on Social Security payments. The new  
1355   system is designed to incentivise work, but those in work are often in poverty too and  
1356   subject to the random allocation of work opportunities, either by chance or through 'zero  
1357   hours' contracts:

1358           'With seasonal work, you can get work, but they get all the staff for the holiday  
1359           camps for example at the same time, and if you miss those three days, because you  
1360           are ill or something, you can't get the work and you are on your own all summer.  
1361           Doing nothing. Just staying in all the time. Watching telly. Then in winter Great  
1362           Yarmouth is like a ghost town with no work at all.' (Pete, aged 18)

1363 For this young man, a decision to seek work for the summer season had been interrupted by  
1364 a bout of chronic illness, which he had suffered from throughout school. This led to  
1365 boredom and to isolation, and a failure to re-establish a social network, which left him  
1366 vulnerable to loneliness that became depression. For another young man, his access to  
1367 employment mitigated his isolation slightly but not his poverty or his sense of exploitation:

1368 I joined the Union this week. My nan is really proud of me. We were on Zero Hours  
1369 and no contracts, no money except when they wanted you to work twelve hour  
1370 shifts and we were being kept off the car park area at Tesco's by the security guards  
1371 when we weren't working. (John, aged 18)

1372 Wanted for their casual labour, treated as 'disposable populations' to be moved on, it is  
1373 remarkable that a response of solidarity, passed on from an earlier generation, was still  
1374 available to John in the form of joining the Union of Shop Distributive and Allied Workers  
1375 (USDAW). It is clearly the case that a basic lack of resources, especially money, makes it hard  
1376 for young people to keep connection with others at an important time in their lives.  
1377 Furthermore, the sense that their presence is not wanted accompanies this. As we discuss in  
1378 detail in Chapter 5, most people growing up in the UK receive a strong message that this is  
1379 the time 'to learn to stand on your own two feet', so the shame of being unable to provide  
1380 for themselves is strong.

1381 People living in rural areas said that just getting to places to meet and socialise was a  
1382 challenge. The contrast in rural areas between those who have their own transport and  
1383 those who do not fuels much loneliness and a sense of missing out on what others take for  
1384 granted. In discussions of rural poverty, the issue of transport is often highlighted, and when  
1385 the experience of young people is brought into the frame, there emerge complex issues

1386 concerning dependence, independence and inter-generational equity as well as cost.  
1387 Dependent on car-driving family members for lifts, and resentful of the free travel afforded  
1388 to senior citizens in contrast with the lack of concessions for the young, the ability to  
1389 establish an independent social life is severely compromised by transport issues for many  
1390 rural young people. This is even more the case where young people and their families are  
1391 experiencing poverty.

1392 'There's just one long road in and one long road out of here. If you don't have a car  
1393 you've had it, basically. There's no trains and no buses. McDonald's is the popular  
1394 place to hang about, but they're fed up because they are getting moved on from  
1395 there now.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1396 'People start to drive young here. One young man, who lives out on a farm, said to  
1397 me one day, "Isn't it funny...I live on the Lone Road and I am really lonely." [So] He's  
1398 living on his own out on that farm and there are no neighbours anywhere. To have  
1399 friends you have to come into town.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1400 The practical limitations on the possibilities for contact are exacerbating the limitation on  
1401 opportunities for new friendship which life in rural towns entails. Poverty is accompanied by  
1402 a difficulty in travelling and sharing experiences with others or meeting new people and  
1403 enjoying new experiences. This can also be true in urban areas when young people do not  
1404 have access, in the same way as elders do, to cheap or reduced public transport systems,  
1405 and with chronic isolation can come a loss of confidence in accessing travel when it does  
1406 become possible. Thus, the tendency of the poorest neighbourhoods to become locked into  
1407 the narrowest experiences is created and reinforced.

1408    **<2> Poverty: ‘Uncared-for’ towns; ‘This is the worst place for...’**

1409    People who work in youth projects can have a deep knowledge about the neighbourhood in  
1410    which they work, and can powerfully communicate the important facts about the  
1411    neighbourhood that contribute to understanding the young people’s lives. During this  
1412    research, we were often told that the project we were visiting was in the second or third  
1413    most deprived ward in a Borough or District or City, or even sometimes in the country. We  
1414    were invited to consider that this was the worst place we would have been, and that the  
1415    types of drugs consumed and crimes committed here were particularly problematic.

1416    Sometimes that can sound a little like the rhetoric that comes with the job. There have been  
1417    a number of studies of community-based youth work that have questioned the investment  
1418    which practitioners can be drawn to make in these representations of the neighbourhoods  
1419    in which they work. The more severe the difficulties faced in a neighbourhood, the greater  
1420    can be deemed their heroism in working there. The value of Imogen Tyler’s (2013)  
1421    conceptualisation of social abjection is that it shows the class dynamic at work, which  
1422    converts systemic injuries into personal shaming. This shaming also occurs at the level of the  
1423    neighbourhood and can be reproduced in bids for resources, in ways that mean these  
1424    damaging classifications are present in the work of projects which are overtly committed to  
1425    empowerment. Nevertheless, during this research, youth work staff were very keen to make  
1426    clear the reality of what these indices of multiple deprivation mean to their work and for  
1427    their engagement with young people.

1428            ‘It’s a really transient population here. 50% of the people who live here don’t come  
1429            from here: they’re Scousers, from Manchester, from Oldham. There was a murder  
1430            here recently and some boys who used to come here got put away even though they

1431 didn't do it (the story is connected to a drugs trade story - JB) ... A lot of people move  
1432 in and out of the area. It can be tense.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1433 Being transient can have many meanings but it suggests an instability of connection to a  
1434 particular place and also a sense of belonging elsewhere, which may lead to particular  
1435 groups being seen as untrustworthy, suspect or worse. Murder, though still an exceptional  
1436 and rare crime, in this account, is seen as arising from the life of a particular criminal  
1437 community linked to a neighbouring urban area. The people from the city region are then  
1438 treated as suspect and they must be kept at a distance. Keeping one another, and perhaps  
1439 many others, at a distance whilst living in close proximity creates tension. Knowing who to  
1440 trust and who not to trust is complicated and dangerous work. Perhaps in such contexts,  
1441 'keeping yourself to yourself' seems the safest option and this too is a condition of  
1442 loneliness.

1443 The challenge for youth workers is to face the realities and still to support young people  
1444 without adding to the stigmatisation of neighbourhoods. The impact of social shame was  
1445 present in all the places we visited that have experienced poverty and neglect for many  
1446 years. The contrast between the small towns and the urban areas, where often a sense of  
1447 proud belonging can mitigate the effects of poverty, was sharp. The sense that a particular  
1448 town has a bad reputation, and that people who live there are looked down on and mocked  
1449 is not an individual pathology but a reality of a social system that mobilises stigma in the  
1450 service of growing inequality. Internalised or projected outwards as aggression, it can lead  
1451 to a powerful social isolation:

1452 'Someone I met at university took three years to tell me he came from Great  
1453 Yarmouth. I come from Norwich and we had both gone away to university but

1454 he couldn't say he came from Great Yarmouth because he was expecting to  
1455 be judged. So he could only make friends by pretending and had not been  
1456 able to share a really important part of who he was. That makes you lonely.'  
1457 (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1458 Linked to the process whereby populations and particular towns experience social abjection  
1459 is the process of being deemed 'less worthy' and 'not entitled' to many forms of social  
1460 support that bring with them a sense of being worthy of care and entitled to exist and thrive  
1461 in the world. Sometimes these lacks of entitlement are so taken for granted that they only  
1462 come into awareness when people see and experience conditions elsewhere:

1463 'We went on a visit to Cambridge recently with the project and I've never  
1464 been there. It was lovely. Really clean and looked after and the people there  
1465 seemed really looked after. People don't feel looked after in Yarmouth.'  
1466 (Youth Worker, Group Discussion).

1467 The researchers visited places and communities across the UK that are struggling under  
1468 years of disinvestment, poverty and austerity policies. Loneliness is a sense of distance from  
1469 how we would like our social or emotional lives to be. Yet, there are many ways in which  
1470 people are distanced and feel disconnected from a life with economic security, with dignity  
1471 and hope in a better future. Research details the ways in which particular groups and places  
1472 are rendered abject, labelled, and blamed and shamed for being different or outside of  
1473 society (Tyler 2013). We found that these feelings of distance and shame were not dissimilar  
1474 to feelings of loneliness and isolation. Yet, as visitors to these communities, we were  
1475 impressed both by the strength of the people and the beauty of the places.

1476 **<2> Poverty: Poor mental health and drug use/abuse**

1477 It is in the context of such 'shaming' that the experience of poverty can come to be linked to  
1478 drug use/abuse and poor mental health. This is sometimes described as a process of self-  
1479 medicating but it can also be seen as a way in which communities and neighbourhoods are  
1480 controlled, both through addictions and through the criminal gangs that support the  
1481 addiction, as well as through the legal chemical controls used to alleviate the symptoms of  
1482 mental illness, especially ADHD, anxiety and depression. This was discussed by youth  
1483 workers and young people both in terms of its long history as well as a response to current  
1484 conditions. The impact of heroin in post-industrial areas as it developed from the 1980s is  
1485 not limited to the 'Trainspotting' generation in Lothian, but exists in many neighbourhoods  
1486 that experienced the mass unemployment of the time. Heroin use itself is not a sociable  
1487 practice. There has been little culture and no supportive scene around heroin. Relationships  
1488 within a heroin using community are often mutually exploitative and built for a common  
1489 purpose of getting the heroin that is needed. Nevertheless, heroin is a drug that takes away  
1490 pain and numbs everything, while putting your life on hold.

1491 'This town is characterised by a problem of 'hidden harm'. Heroin came here early  
1492 and there are young people all over the town living in families where they come  
1493 second to the drug use. The biggest barrier to overcoming loneliness is  
1494 acknowledging that you need help and support. There isn't one person that comes  
1495 through that door that doesn't need help and support.' (Youth Worker, Group  
1496 Discussion)

1497 The other key addiction that was discussed was alcohol addiction. This is a socially  
1498 acceptable addiction and sometimes being drunk is seen as a requirement of being sociable  
1499 and able to be friendly and connected.

1500 'I'm out on my birthday. I'm drinking this bottle of Patron. Technically I'm  
1501 destroying my body through alcohol and all that shit but if I post it [online]  
1502 what does it mean to other people? It's like the likes. I'm addicted to likes. You  
1503 get that quick little buzz then you question it. Question the way I behaved.  
1504 Question posting it. Like I was saying, I was destroying my body... [but] we live  
1505 in a society that idolizes celebs and all they do is post pictures of them doing  
1506 drugs and drink and all that.' (Mark, aged 25, Manchester)

1507 'People say 'no pressure,' but when they say that they mean there is pressure. And  
1508 with social media, people don't post bad things, only good. You're just being faced  
1509 all the time with things you can't have.' (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

1510 The level of pressure which young people experience from a variety of directions can lead to  
1511 loneliness and to socialising in destructive and self-destructive ways, seen as preferable to  
1512 suffering the shame of being alone and to getting a diagnosis of mental illness of some kind.

1513 In a recent paper for the 'Pathologies of Solitude' project, David Vincent reiterates many of  
1514 the perceptions of the young people we encountered:

1515 Recent United Nations data suggests that fourteen million people, over a fifth of the  
1516 population, are in poverty and one and a half million are destitute. Deprivation has  
1517 impacted directly on solitude with regard to inadequate housing, insufficient surplus  
1518 cash to spend on personal pastimes, and exclusion from physical and virtual mobility.



1519 The poor are also less likely to have access to the social and medical services which  
1520 can relieve the experience or threat of loneliness.

1521 The post-1998 austerity programme challenges any attempt to develop a  
1522 government strategy in this field. But with the state unable to spend significant sums  
1523 on welfare and continuing disinvestment in critical facilities such as public libraries  
1524 and adult social services, the prospect of an effective, integrated attack on even the  
1525 more acute forms of loneliness seems remote.

1526 Loneliness has become a proxy not so much for the contradictions in the social  
1527 relations of our times, as for the intensifying crisis in the distribution of wealth and  
1528 the management of public services. (Vincent 2019)

1529 This was strongly reinforced by Philip Alston, the UN Rapporteur, whose analysis of poverty  
1530 in the UK was greeted with scepticism by the Conservative Government:

1531 Austerity policies have deliberately gutted local authorities and thereby effectively  
1532 eliminated many social services, reduced policing services to skeletal proportions,  
1533 closed libraries in record numbers, shrunk community and youth centres, and sold  
1534 off public spaces and buildings including parks and recreation centres. It is hardly  
1535 surprising that civil society has reported unheard-of levels of loneliness and isolation,  
1536 prompting the Government to appoint a Minister for Suicide Prevention. (Alston  
1537 2018)

1538 We have discussed the questions of this ‘take-up’ of the loneliness agenda in an earlier  
1539 chapter and the issue of its connection with suicidality is considered later. However, the  
1540 way in which conditions of poverty exacerbate loneliness for young people could not have

1541    been more clearly stated in the research we undertook. The social conditions of poverty

1542    exacerbate not only shame but also loneliness.

1543

## **<1> Chapter 5: Being an Outsider**

'Community' is often used as a warmly persuasive word to add a positive glow to a policy or seen in a nostalgic lens as having been the prevailing characteristic of working class life and being among the primary working class values. In the process of this research, some assumptions about 'community' were strongly challenged. This chapter focuses on the ways that 'outsider' positions are constructed and contribute to the social conditions of loneliness. It does this by examining stories we heard that were presented by those who told them as aspects of small town or small place experiences. We recognise that these experiences can be mirrored in the more liberal cultures of many cities where young people growing up in socially or religiously conservative families find themselves positioned as 'outsiders', especially in relation to liberal sexual cultures. In our analysis, we have connected this with themes of social segregation.

Large urban centres are often seen as 'the lonely city'. Smaller places are often characterised, both positively and negatively, as having a strong sense of community and belonging, but young people growing up in such places explored how these too can be lonely. It was the experience of being 'different' from the norms of that particular place and subject to the formal and informal policing of those norms which threatened to leave young people with the feeling of being 'outsiders', not belonging and experiencing loneliness in consequence. The research team found that a sense of being an insider or an outsider, of belonging or not belonging, may be strong in places which pride themselves on their sense of community. In a city, where there are multiple possibilities of connection and disconnection, everyone is an outsider to someone, and so potentially also an insider and belonging to someone too. In smaller settlements such as villages and towns, there are

1567 different conditions of connection, as most people can be expected to know one another, to  
1568 attend the same schools and to shop in the same shops. Experiences of loneliness are  
1569 therefore intricately entangled with our relationships with ourselves, with people we know  
1570 or are near to, and with the spaces which bring us together or keep us apart.

## 1571 <2> Disability and segregation

1572 One young person, Alan, spoke at length with researchers about his experience of schooling.  
1573 This was a young man who had been through primary school with a constant struggle to  
1574 engage with the work but who nevertheless enjoyed school, despite being teased, called  
1575 names and generally bullied because teachers often singled him out as behind the rest of  
1576 the class. His complex needs and disability meant that he was often not able to attend  
1577 school as he had to attend medical appointments, and he told us that at the end of primary  
1578 school it was assumed that he would no longer be able to attend a mainstream school as a  
1579 result of his 'special needs'. All the children in that area who were classified as learning  
1580 disabled were expected to attend a special school and not to be able to manage alongside  
1581 others.

1582

1583 'My mum helped me. We were being told (because I had learning disabilities), "you  
1584 can't go to that school; you can't have this and you can't have that". But my mum  
1585 fought for me not to have to go to a special school. You get really isolated from all  
1586 the other kids if you live in a small place and you go to a special school.' (Alan, aged  
1587 17)

1588 The term 'special' has become a loaded and much hated term among activists in the  
1589 Disabled People's Rights movement. It is for good reason that, in that movement, such

schools are usually referred to as ‘segregated schools’ (Greenstein 2015). The impact of austerity measures is felt disproportionately by disabled young people and those classified with special educational needs. Since 2014, the numbers of young people who have not been allocated places in schools has risen dramatically and most are expected to be home schooled (Allfie 2019). Alan’s sense of how his needs were responded to was channelled through an immense respect for the way his mum had fought for him, which he communicated strongly. His mum was a powerful ally and friend and he explained his feeling that it was friendship and not becoming isolated that mattered, and that going to a special school was a clear route, in his village, to becoming a definite outsider, cut off from the other families in the village. Making sure he was not cut off from a friendship and support network had been his mother’s priority. In addition to this, there was a sense of his mother resisting, on his behalf, the discrimination which attending a special school entailed, in terms of the reduction of expectation in educational opportunities and the possibilities of exam success. It was only, almost as an afterthought, that Alan explained that although he was now fighting, once again, for access to a college: he had in fact achieved pass grades in five GCSEs. He was also a confident member of a county-wide youth project, often representing them at key events.

## **<2> Sexuality and isolation**

In one Northern Irish town, the youth project had been set up initially to support young people experiencing multiple ‘hidden harms’ within their families, harms which are often hidden from the young person themselves and may not be known to their schools or other adults. Whilst retaining its function as a hub for those young people, it was also developing practice rooted in the traditions of youth work in Northern Ireland where creativity and

1613 nurture flourish. The town has long been divided between the majority Unionist community,  
1614 which is highly Conservative, and the minority Republican community. Union flags were  
1615 flying on lampposts on the streets when we arrived in the town. The hub of the project is in  
1616 a shop on a street corner in the town centre, deliberately chosen to be in a neutral area.  
1617 These potentially conflicting senses of community and loyalty still persist, long after the  
1618 signing of the Good Friday Agreement, even if they are no longer the only or the chief focus  
1619 of youth work. In a lively discussion among youth workers, one mentions that, 'the bravest  
1620 thing anyone ever does here is to come in at the door.' Every young person has to move out  
1621 of their own territory to come to the project; it can often take a year between someone first  
1622 hearing of the project and actually arriving there.

1623 At the start of the session, the Manchester team and the Northern Irish youth workers met  
1624 and began to talk about loneliness. A member of the research team mentioned the sign on  
1625 the window celebrating Equal Love, with a rainbow clearly visible:

1626        'We really needed to start up LGBT services as there weren't any here and we were  
1627        meeting young people who were thinking of taking their own lives. That poster in the  
1628        window is the only one supporting equal same sex marriage on display in the town.  
1629        We haven't had a brick through the window yet though.' (Youth Worker, Group  
1630        Discussion)

1631 This is a socially, religiously and politically conservative town, and so anyone questioning  
1632 their heterosexuality here will to this day expect rejection and loneliness as a taken for  
1633 granted starting point. In putting up that poster and indeed in starting an LGBT group, the  
1634 youth workers were indicating their sense of the loneliness and isolation a young person  
1635 might face and their determination to open up a different path. Indeed, the 'out' youth

workers in the area tended to be based in the nearest city. This situation was not completely different from the position in many other small towns across the UK. Still, the appearance of the poster in the window combined with the fact that the window had not yet been broken was seen as a mark of progress by another Northern Irish youth worker we spoke with:

‘If we had put that poster up twenty years ago, or even one that mentioned contraception, there would have been a phone call telling us to take it down the next day. Maybe the days of ‘whatever you say, say nothing’ are beginning to come to an end’ (Youth Worker, Group Discussion).

Since this research was undertaken, the situation has changed dramatically in Northern Ireland following the murder of Lyra McKee, a journalist killed during rioting in Derry in 2019, and same sex marriage is poised to become legal at the time of writing.

There is a sense in which the process of growing up and becoming an adult who embraces the possibility of romantic and sexual relationships, and thereby of leaving the childhood home, is always a potentially lonely process, whatever the sexual desires and orientations that are being explored. But in small communities where personal desires are the subject of political control, and where what is acceptable is very closely regulated, ‘coming out’ as lesbian, gay, trans\*, or any other kind of queer non-normative human is almost certain to be a lonely process. Indeed any kind of breaking away from established norms, even for those experimenting with heterosexual relationships, is likely to be isolating. Ironically, this is something which conservative religious communities, which may be hostile to one another in many ways, can be expected to agree on. The controls that are exercised on sexuality in conservative religious culture may also become politicised in a very public way at times, with active political campaigning against sex and relationships education for example, or

1659 against abortion. Such campaigns further intensify the fear and loneliness of young people  
1660 as they begin the exploration of their adult sexuality, and of the possibilities and  
1661 responsibilities which accompany it.

## 1662 <2> Racism, segregation and isolation

1663 A further example of being lonely as a result of being positioned as an outsider concerns the  
1664 impact of segregated employment practices. Some districts in the town house employ  
1665 foreign workers only: 'There's a chicken factory there and the only people who work there  
1666 are foreign workers and the majority of people here don't like foreigners.' Although this  
1667 participant in the research was referring to a particular chicken factory in a particular town,  
1668 there are many such chicken factories on the edge of small towns, and segregated places of  
1669 employment throughout towns and cities, that employ and exploit foreign workers. Children  
1670 and young people from the families of these workers, growing up as foreigners, may well  
1671 never become insiders in this town, and so rely on befriending one another, connecting with  
1672 families 'back home' and perhaps with fellow foreigners in larger cities. They survive in this  
1673 way but remain outside the intricate networks of the locals, and hence much more  
1674 vulnerable to both attack and exploitation. When young people seek to question community  
1675 expectations or norms in such situations, where their only chance of avoiding xenophobic  
1676 hostility is by sticking with their community, the experience of loneliness is all the more  
1677 intense.

1678 The racism experienced by people of colour in places where there is a very small Black  
1679 presence was also articulated in the course of the research. One young man, a very talented  
1680 footballer, was supported by a coach who nevertheless used racist banter as a motivator.  
1681 The young man's ability to respond to this banter was limited. In this small town, he had



1682 strong roots and good family support from his white family, but his ‘difference’, as a mixed  
1683 race young man (as he termed himself), was continuously marked through such banter. It  
1684 was only by moving to the city and making contact with other Black communities that he  
1685 began to feel a real acceptance of his Black identity. In so doing, he was able to  
1686 acknowledge the impact of the racist banter. Previously, in order to sustain connection and  
1687 friendship, he had been required to go along with it. Racist banter in schools and the failure  
1688 to address this was a theme chosen for enquiry by the British Youth Parliament’s Youth  
1689 Select Committee in 2016, a fact that indicates that the experience that we heard recounted  
1690 during the project was far from unique.

## 1691 <2> Isolation and keeping out of trouble

1692 Finally in this context the challenge posed for young people trying to avoid getting involved  
1693 in low-level crime in an area where this is the norm was mentioned as a source of pressure  
1694 and loneliness. This is particularly hard in communities where crime offers a real  
1695 opportunity to make much needed money. It was providing support to such young people  
1696 that motivated one of the youth workers in the study to set up a club at a different time of  
1697 day for a small group of young people who were consciously avoiding and hiding from other  
1698 club users. They felt frightened of other young people who had come to dominate the youth  
1699 provision in the town and who were regarded as dangerous:

1700 ‘There’s a group of young people who I’ve started a new club for. They come in just after  
1701 school. They don’t like coming when the other kids come, cos they are really quiet, really  
1702 shy. There’s just a few of them, but they’re getting a chance now.’ (Youth Worker, Group  
1703 Discussion)

1704 In summary, young people were reporting experiencing loneliness as a result of the slow  
1705 pace of change in their home towns and villages or in their neighbourhoods. This then is  
1706 self-reinforcing as people who feel they do not generally fit in, would rather leave and find  
1707 connection and a sense of belonging elsewhere. In terms of sexuality, this was discussed  
1708 everywhere as an issue for everyone who was identifying as not straight, as anything other  
1709 than heterosexual. It was also the case for heterosexual young people whose behaviour was  
1710 judged negatively. This could be because they were seen as too sexually active, or, in a  
1711 reversal of the same theme, as not sufficiently interested in sex. However, needing to stick  
1712 to your own community (even when you felt isolated within it) was at the same time a  
1713 rational response to sectarianism and racism, thus limiting the social networks that young  
1714 people could draw on. In a similar way, traditional and narrow attitudes to disability created  
1715 loneliness and segregation.

## 1716 <2> Youth loneliness and place

1717 The places we live matter, and they offer young people a range of specific possibilities for  
1718 connection. Lack of access to transport on equal terms with senior citizens is a very common  
1719 issue raised by young people living in both urban and rural areas. During the period of this  
1720 study, young people in Greater Manchester led a successful campaign through the Greater  
1721 Manchester Combined Youth Authority for a travel pass that would also extend access to  
1722 leisure, sports and cultural opportunities. From September 2019, young people have been  
1723 able to apply for a pass which will give free bus travel to 16-18 year olds as well as access to  
1724 cultural and sport events from Greater Manchester-supported groups. But this kind of  
1725 access, which has been successfully campaigned for in a major urban area, may be less  
1726 forthcoming in rural areas and may mean less when most bus routes have either closed or

1727 are limited in their hours and destinations. Similarly, most rural areas do not offer  
1728 equivalent sport, leisure and cultural opportunities to those available in urban areas.

1729 At the same time, the attachments to place and the access to the natural world commonly  
1730 available to people living in small towns and in rural areas can be seen as a resource to  
1731 counter loneliness. It is harder to sustain and to recreate such attachments in a move to a  
1732 complex urban area, and this may underlie the loneliness of some students on their move to  
1733 university, who miss not only people but the specific place and environment that they have  
1734 left. Whilst the examples in this chapter suggest that small places are successful at creating  
1735 outsiders, this can also be a condition of urban life, which can be seen as nothing other than  
1736 the creation of a plurality of possibilities for outsider status. What matters is that we are  
1737 attentive to how the kind of place, and both the social and the geographical networks and  
1738 natural resources of a particular locale, have an impact and form part of the social  
1739 conditions of loneliness for young people.

## 1740 <2> Youth loneliness: segregation, stigma and racism

1741 The story of the boy whose mother fought for him not to have to attend a special school can  
1742 be seen as a fight against the impact of segregation. Young people whose parents work in  
1743 the chicken factory that only employs foreigners are also experiencing a form of social  
1744 segregation. In the case of the boy with learning disabilities, his mother was fighting for his  
1745 friendship networks that she sensed would be severed in the small place where they lived if  
1746 he was sent to a different school from all the other children. When possible friendship  
1747 networks are limited to those who share the same conditions of discrimination, the same  
1748 limitations on their opportunities and the same restricted conditions of life, strong bonds  
1749 are formed within a community, and strong norms also. Young people who are seeking to

1750 test the limits of these norms and forge a different path for themselves are likely to be  
1751 lonely on two counts. They will be lonely within their own community, even whilst it may be  
1752 holding tightly on to them. They will be lonely through a lack of ability to experiment with  
1753 the possibility to live life differently as this involves facing the anticipated possibility of an  
1754 elsewhere. And they will in all likelihood be lonely when they have gone away from the  
1755 community they are leaving.

1756 The operation of stigma and shame is, as was discussed in the previous chapter in relation  
1757 to poverty, a powerful control on young people. Loneliness itself can be stigmatised and this  
1758 is then often caught up with other aspects of the stigma machine (Tyler 2020). The example  
1759 of the decision of the youth hub in Northern Ireland to challenge homophobia by publicly  
1760 displaying a poster supporting equal marriage is an example of an action taken to counter  
1761 stigma and the loneliness associated with it.

1762 The stigma attached to growing up gay (to use one shorthand for LGBTQI\*) remains  
1763 systemic. While it does not appear straightforwardly as segregation in the labour market (as  
1764 for the workers in the chicken factory) or in the school system (as for the boy with learning  
1765 disabilities), it is routinely presented as prohibited in many religious cultures, alongside but  
1766 markedly worse than other sexual offences, and potentially punished more severely. This  
1767 includes, internationally, the existence of regimes that retain cruel punishments such as  
1768 stoning and other forms of the death penalty. The fact that these punishments exist globally  
1769 can be mobilised as a source of fear and threat even within societies with more liberal legal  
1770 systems. It also remains the case at the time of writing that there are very strict restrictions  
1771 on abortion in Northern Ireland compared to the rest of the United Kingdom and same sex  
1772 marriage remains illegal there. The common use of the word 'gay' as a generic insult among

1773 young people in schools is a daily mark of these systemic conditions and cannot be well  
1774 challenged by invitations to more respectful speech alone.

1775 These structuring conditions support patterns of social relations which are then experienced  
1776 personally. Growing up with a fear of being marked by stigma is silencing and prevents  
1777 authentic reaching out for connection. The stigma machine creates one of the social  
1778 conditions of loneliness.

1779 Given that the Black body has carried projections of violence which have then supported the  
1780 fantasy of the need for forcible control since the era of slavery, it is inescapably the case  
1781 that systemic racism has a powerful impact on both girls and boys as they are growing up.  
1782 The fact that in some aspects this may be connected with loneliness is less evident but was  
1783 made clear to us in the account of the experience with the football coach. Racialised banter  
1784 as a form of humour might necessarily be disavowed as racism, in a situation in which there  
1785 was little Black presence. Young people claiming their identifications with Blackness often  
1786 do so in a context of significant isolation, in an education system which largely renders their  
1787 experience invisible and a policing system which continues to assume that they are  
1788 considerably more likely to be involved with crime and violence than their white  
1789 counterparts. Young people in this situation are isolated, unable to share their experiences  
1790 with their peers and forced to put up with low-level harassment disguised as humour with  
1791 good spirits.

1792 One of the most significant shifts in academic youth studies has been in the recognition of  
1793 difference as the very basis of experience rather than as 'deviance'. Nevertheless,  
1794 hegemonic systems, particularly in education, continue to normalise and to work through  
1795 binary constructions of 'them' and 'us', different and normal. It therefore remains the case

1796 that loneliness can be a consequence of not participating in hegemonic constructions of  
1797 'them' and 'us' . In consequence it is also the case that in the words of one of the  
1798 participants, though loneliness is real, it may, in the process of moving towards a sense of  
1799 authenticity and creativity in living, not always be worst thing.

1800 In this chapter we have suggested that a claim to a strong sense of community should not  
1801 be taken at face value. Studdert and Walkerdine (2016) suggest that 'community' should be  
1802 seen as a verb and not a noun: community and connecting are actions caught in and  
1803 creating the forms of micro-sociality that we have discussed in this chapter. These forms of  
1804 micro-sociality include, all or any interaction between people, something as small as smiling  
1805 at people you recognize from frequent sightings but do not know, to groups working for  
1806 common goals like a community centre, to the various behaviours of the state through  
1807 formal and informal interaction.

1808 In the examples we have considered in this chapter, all these levels of micro-sociality are  
1809 present: from the nourishing and sustaining of an inclusive community based youth hub to  
1810 the racially inflected comments that may or may not be jokes of a football coach and in the  
1811 state-led directives concerning 'special educational needs.' These can all be seen as  
1812 contributing to 'community' as a verb, with all its dynamic force and its existence as a vector  
1813 of power with the ability to include and exclude, and thus also to be a social condition of  
1814 loneliness.

## **<1> Chapter 6: The education system, aspiration and loneliness**

In August every year in England and Wales, the announcement of exam results is a moment of mental health crisis for young people. The normalised pressures which the current education system places on young people throughout their schooling and into their twenties and beyond is the third focus for our discussion of the social conditions of youth loneliness. We are considering the education system as a social condition, as it is the chief institutional framework that shapes the experience of all children and young people. The regular summer coincidence of the reporting of exam results followed by reports of increasing incidence of mental health problems among young people is not actually a coincidence at all, in the sense of a random happening. It is built into the system. This chapter explores a systemic emotional dynamic which is deepening the chances of loneliness among young people and which is re-inforced by the belief that 'success is individual'. A banner in the street displaying this very message and created by fashion students of Manchester Metropolitan University was prominent in the city centre throughout the period of this research.

Discussions in the core research team led us to focus particularly on the impact of aspirational cultures. The theme of aspiration has been widely discussed in educational research and the political rhetoric surrounding the alleged lack of aspiration in pupils of lower socio-economic status has been subject to scrutiny (Siraj Blatchford 2009; Holloway, Brown & Pimlott-Wilson 2011; Allen 2016). In our study, the ways in which aspiration creates loneliness and isolation came to the fore.

An important recurring finding was that loneliness accompanies both the fear of and the experience of disappointment: of disappointing both oneself and those who have invested

1838 their hopes in you, if and when the path of education or career 'success' is not sustained.  
1839 There is extensive research that demonstrates the various ways in which young people are  
1840 told that they must be resilient, hardworking and competitive, and that they must aspire to  
1841 career and material success. These aspirations impose particular pressures on young people,  
1842 creating idealized career trajectories that are difficult to live up to. The inevitable  
1843 disappointment is intrinsic to the hopes of betterment.

1844 At the same time, the success imagined and worked for in these aspiration narratives tends  
1845 to lead young people away from their families and support systems. This is especially true  
1846 for young people who are the first in their families to stay on in the education system and  
1847 attend university. The emotional as well as the financial costliness of such transitions is too  
1848 little acknowledged still. They involve shifts in identity and the development of new forms of  
1849 hybrid identities emerging through difficult emotional dynamics in the families who are to  
1850 be left behind but who have nevertheless helped sustain their children's success: difficult  
1851 dynamics of children 'never asking for anything'; of parents as burdened; of envy, love and  
1852 pride. Moving into the intellectual domain is a massive shift for working-class young people  
1853 who do well at school, requiring an internal and external transformation. The complexities  
1854 of the losses as well as the gains involved in educational success and upward mobility for  
1855 working-class young people need to be much better understood.

1856 Recent and older writing on this theme has highlighted the ways in which those from  
1857 working class families navigating the education system are accompanied by loneliness as a  
1858 result of the experience of dislocation and care-less-ness (Rogers 2016). The sense of lack of  
1859 entitlement is powerful and connects to an outsider status in the world of academic



1860 achievement, an achievement which had never been anticipated or understood in the  
1861 lifeworlds in which they have grown up.

1862 In the context of schools, whilst the terrors of performativity - for both teachers and pupils –  
1863 have been well and widely documented, there has been less discussion of the complex  
1864 systemic emotional consequences of these data driven cultures of performativity. It is as if  
1865 the connection must be erased between the exam results announcements immediately  
1866 followed by discussions of deteriorating young people's mental health. It might have been  
1867 expected that a finding of our research would be that school exclusion creates loneliness.  
1868 Clearly it can and does, however, the loneliness associated with those who aspire high and  
1869 are conformist to the messages of the school system was an unanticipated finding and one  
1870 which we focus on here. We see this as an aspect of the social conditions of loneliness, as  
1871 the pressures to succeed within the school system are almost universally experienced, even  
1872 though negotiated by young people in very different ways.

1873 Anyone, even people who are apparently doing really well, can experience loneliness, and  
1874 the negativity and isolation embodied in loneliness makes it hard to share. Loneliness is  
1875 stigmatised, and so loneliness is lonely and silenced. The desire for success is at least a  
1876 double bind: hard when achieved (social distance and physical distance can accompany  
1877 success) and hard when there is failure.

1878       'There can be so much disappointment and loneliness because we are encouraged to  
1879       aspire and have ambitions and then what happens when we fail? Maybe exam  
1880       results aren't good enough. The ideal you've been built up for – like being a  
1881       footballer, being a doctor – doesn't happen. So who are you now? Who do you  
1882       connect with? Old connections are broken. Who do you turn to? Not your family

1883 because you don't want to add to their sense of disappointment... Online, happiness  
1884 is compulsory. Looking happy online with a drink in your hand. You can't say: this is  
1885 really hard and I'm missing you.... And sometimes, even when I've now done  
1886 everything I was meant to do, and I've succeeded in school and pleased my family  
1887 and gone to uni, and I still feel very unhappy and lonely... what now?' (Patience,  
1888 aged 20, Manchester)

1889 In this case, a sense that disappointment and loneliness might be circulating in a family or  
1890 support network is made explicit. What a support network might look like in a world in  
1891 which all are expected to 'stand on their own two feet' deserves further consideration. If  
1892 seeking support and help is stigmatised as failure rather than celebrated as success, this  
1893 means, in a culture which values individual success above everything, that even the most  
1894 well designed interventions will founder.

## 1895 <2> Individualism

1896 The celebration of individual achievement is a basic aspect of contemporary life. The ability  
1897 to celebrate and mark one's own achievements is in itself necessary both for further  
1898 achievement and for achievements to be recognized. The 'selfie' must be posted along with  
1899 the news of results. Anita Biressi has studied the use of the selfie in work cultures and media  
1900 cultures that create a set of messages about the manufacture of a successful self (Biressi  
1901 2017). The production of the selfie is a personal project, especially in relation to the worlds  
1902 of paid work, careers, and economic security that is now deployed across the social  
1903 spectrum. Both working-class and middle-class subjects are invited to present their best  
1904 selves via selfie culture. These are used to demonstrate their 'passion' for work. According  
1905 to Biressi, selfies bind together personal biographies and social media profiles in the pursuit

1906 of advancement and financial security. Workers are figured as the heroes of their own lives  
1907 and self-portraiture is one important component of this self-fashioning. Biressi calls this an  
1908 'idol' of self-production.

1909 The idea of the 'idol' is important in pointing to the forms of hero worship that flow through  
1910 individualist society, in which we are invited to see ourselves an appropriate object of  
1911 adoration even as we are also invited to idolise remote and glamorous others such as  
1912 celebrities, pop stars, and footballers. A narcissistic spirit of worship informs self-production  
1913 and selfie production, and seems at times to chime with an apparently democratic promise  
1914 of meritocracy. But it also addresses (in a commodified form) desires for authentic self-  
1915 expression. The power of the selfie is an index of the anxieties produced by the  
1916 individualisation of work in a precarious economy. These anxieties serve to mask an  
1917 experience of loneliness. And a definition of adulthood is 'learning to stand on your own  
1918 two feet'.

1919 One young person talked movingly about the loneliness he had experienced when he left  
1920 home to go to university.

1921

1922 'I come from a single parent family and I'm very close to my mum. I did well at  
1923 college and I got a place at Uni in London. But I had to come home. I was so lonely. I  
1924 was doing well on the course, very well. But I had no friends and I didn't have  
1925 enough money. London is so expensive. But you can't keep running to mummy and  
1926 daddy.' (Matt, Norwich)

1927 A number of reports, including studies undertaken by the UK Higher Education Statistical  
1928 Association (HESA) have recently highlighted the loneliness faced by a significant minority of

1929 students at universities, and the serious increase in mental health problems that may also  
1930 accompany it. Many of the anxieties that develop during schooling are now intensified in  
1931 the extended period of transition that university represents, and anxiety about the debt  
1932 incurred through studying becomes an additional pressure. Powerful messages that  
1933 attendance at university represents 'success' and 'the time of your life' inevitably produce  
1934 disappointment and make loneliness all the harder to bear. The culture of individualism in  
1935 both education and employment offers few strategies for coping with such disappointment  
1936 and loneliness. While a climate of magical voluntarism – the myth that we can overcome  
1937 difficulties through our own efforts – prevails (Fisher 2014), the disappointment and  
1938 depression consequent to our inability to change things individually is both commonly  
1939 experienced and intensely privatized.

## 1940 <2> Instrumentality, work and achievement

1941 'I'd like to organise an event where every time a teacher spoke to a student, the  
1942 students would just reply with their exam number and their predicted grades.'  
1943 (Silvia, Manchester)

1944 The issue that young people are known only by their scores, their exam number and their  
1945 predicted grades, or only by their position on an assessment scale in relation to mental  
1946 health issues, is being increasingly discussed. This kind of relationship between young  
1947 people and the institutions that support them fuels loneliness, partly by building in the  
1948 expectation that the education system has no interest in the value of young people's lives  
1949 beyond their academic achievements and other key indicators by which schools are judged.  
1950 Young people's attendance and success at school is required to fulfil the school's insatiable  
1951 appetite for improving metrics. It's the scores on the doors that count. Additionally, young

1952 people are not expected to enter a relational space, but one in which competition for  
1953 positional goods and status is the norm.

1954 'I used to think that when I'm 30 I'll have the Mondeo, the house and all that stuff.  
1955 But... I'm getting older and I still don't know if I'll get that. I don't know what I'm  
1956 doing yet. I don't have a career. I'm trying to find my path... I get anxiety about not  
1957 spending my time wisely, not getting ahead. Why am I not building, being  
1958 productive? Why I'm not getting on? ... But what if you're productive and get a job  
1959 but don't like it? I'm from a family that counts every penny and I might be able to  
1960 change that.' (Gil, aged 23, Manchester)

1961 This young person feels pressure to use his time productively, expressing an instrumental  
1962 approach to time, where succeeding for himself and his family ought to take priority over  
1963 taking time to connect with other people for pleasure and social relationships. Then there  
1964 are fears of failure and isolation. Not wanting to worry or fail your family seemed to be a  
1965 pressure that kept some young people from being open and honest with their family,  
1966 isolating them from potential sources of support and care. An education system that seems  
1967 to make the promise 'work hard and you can have anything you want', does not and cannot  
1968 deliver on that promise, especially not in terms of cash and especially for those who come  
1969 from 'families that count every penny' (Mendick et al. 2015).

1970 Achievement and aspiration often involve a loss of support structures and this loss does not  
1971 only apply to those in the allegedly 'non-aspiring' traditional, post-industrial communities.  
1972 Aspiration and achievement can also come at a cost of the loss of new forms of support that  
1973 have emerged in urban centres such as Manchester for people with non-normative  
1974 sexualities. This, for example, is a vignette developed in a group of LGBTIQ\* young people:

1975

1976 'I just started my first job and moved from the big city to a small town. Up till now  
1977 life revolved around making music but in this job it's hard to fit in. I just don't fit in. I  
1978 just don't get the work environment. In the office there's just one type of group who  
1979 are all getting married and having children I'm away from the people I like and get on  
1980 with. It's a small town. There isn't loads to do and there aren't many people to find  
1981 who are like me. But I'm doing the job because it pays well and my family are very  
1982 proud of me.' (Sally, aged 23, Manchester)

1983 The family's strong recognition and pride in their daughter's achievements is coming at  
1984 some cost of loneliness for their daughter. The norms of a working environment that  
1985 revolves around hetero-normative family life are isolating and provide no sense of  
1986 possibility for a young woman who identifies as gay. The imperative to earn well however is  
1987 the strongest driver, even though the emotional costs are significant.

1988 In contrast, others become isolated because they have no access to a workplace or a peer  
1989 group. We spoke to a girl whose parents had conservative views and who was not allowed  
1990 to go out to work, unable to make the first steps to financial independence:

1991 'My father didn't want us girls to go out and get work. But my sister went and got a  
1992 job working on a Burger Bar at Old Trafford [Cricket Ground] so she did that for a bit  
1993 and I was envious that she had her own money and I wanted to do it too. But my  
1994 family thought it wasn't suitable for girls to go out to work; to be out alone like that.  
1995 I can go college though.' (Miriam, aged 19, Manchester)

1996 The use of the phrase: 'to be alone like that' is telling. It tells of a family's sense that a girl  
1997 without the protection of a man, whether it be her father, brother, cousin or husband,

1998 would be 'alone' and therefore vulnerable. In a sense, the young gay woman in the office  
1999 just described might be said to be 'alone' in this way, as she no longer has the protection of  
2000 a music scene she loves or a sense of a gay-accepting community around her. At the same  
2001 time, the young woman who, unlike her older sister, does not defy her family's expectations  
2002 is lonely. Their protection is creating a restriction for her, which attending college may  
2003 mitigate and may even change. However, attending college will not any longer give her  
2004 access to the all-important independent financial resource. In other powerful narratives of  
2005 success, access to financial independence is so important that it must be achieved even  
2006 when loneliness and separation from support networks is one of the costs.

2007 Isolation and loneliness can then occur both in trying to live our society's dream of  
2008 aspiration, individual achievement and success, and in being prevented from doing so.

2009 **<2> 'You can't keep running to mummy and daddy'**

2010 Sometimes schools' formal systems are so distrusted that friendship involves navigating  
2011 what seem to be offers of support and turn out to be dangerous in the name of what seem  
2012 more real possibilities of support:

2013 'My school has a support hub where pupils can go if they are feeling lonely. But you  
2014 can't go there. It's the last place you can go. No one would use that hub if they were  
2015 lonely.' (Faith, aged 16, Manchester)

2016 In the conversations that happened about loneliness, the idea that young people yearn for  
2017 or aspire to an impossible future was never far away. This is combined with the idea that  
2018 success in adult life involves 'manning up' (for people of all genders), managing life on your  
2019 own and not running to mummy and daddy. As such, it should surprise no-one that

2020 loneliness is a feature of many young people's lives and is likely to remain so as long as  
2021 schooling and education is focussed as it is currently.

2022 This is also the chief reason that attempts to 'fix' loneliness as it develops into isolation may  
2023 require radical strategies rather than simple interventions. In any case, one of the ways that  
2024 loneliness can become a fruitful ground for change is by allowing and acknowledging its  
2025 existence and supporting the capacity to be alone in one's company as a place from which  
2026 to find deeper forms of connection.

2027 The imperative to be happy is certainly strengthened in social media practices (not  
2028 discussed here) which were highlighted in our study. In families where a high premium was  
2029 placed on the need for children to succeed in school, there was a particular issue associated  
2030 with pride. The phrase, 'my family/parents are very proud of me' recurred in these contexts  
2031 and the sense of letting parents down and disappointing them by acknowledging  
2032 unhappiness was in itself a powerful source of pain. For some participants in the research,  
2033 these parental projections were strengthened by the practice in schools of allocating  
2034 'expected results' from a very young age, such that a failure to achieve predicted top grades  
2035 can be experienced as devastating failure, even when the grades are still in the highest  
2036 categories. The issue of how to enable a sense of pride in oneself is made extremely  
2037 complex in such a school/family dynamic. Thus even for children for whom 'the bank of  
2038 mum and dad' exists and who can and do keep 'running to mummy and daddy', there is a  
2039 loss of status and potential infantilisation and isolation involved.

2040 In turn, this can become an issue during working life with a recognition that the family's  
2041 investments in their childrens' success has to be protected, even at the cost of telling the  
2042 truth about what is really happening in the workplace. This is a time when many graduates



2043 are not employed at 'graduate level', and many who are either self-employed or employed  
2044 at graduate level are not able to find more than very casual and precarious employment and  
2045 cannot secure a place in the world of property-owners. In this context, protecting a proud  
2046 family against the truth of disappointment must be a widespread feature of youth  
2047 loneliness. In terms of how schools might respond, there is clearly a need for a more honest  
2048 account of the relationship between educational and employment outcomes. The examples  
2049 of pride in collective endeavours, such as joining a trade union or acting as an advocate for  
2050 young people in relation to mental health, point to another way in which the pressures  
2051 implicit in the 'pride/disappointment' dynamic might be re-channelled.

2052 Like pride, aspiration (as an individual) must be intrinsically linked to hope and therefore to  
2053 disappointment and shame. It is clearly possible that a desire to please one's parents may  
2054 also be part of a wider set of possibilities for the future, and of alternative and what some  
2055 would term utopian imaginations. This connects with the issue of the temporalities of youth  
2056 loneliness. Given the transit status of 'youth' and the way it can intersect with other  
2057 provisional and transitory positions, we need to enquire more into the ways in which way  
2058 adults (especially perhaps teachers, parents and youth workers) invest hope in young  
2059 people as signs of the possibility of a better future. This appears to contrast with the way  
2060 young people themselves seem to practice hope, which is in an altogether more pragmatic  
2061 and here and now kind of way. The methods that young people have developed of giving  
2062 and receiving help reveal this. There is also an increasing recognition that adult autonomy is  
2063 not necessarily to be accepted as a goal of development. Rather the capacity to give and  
2064 receive help throughout life may begin to be seen as a definer of acceptable human  
2065 relationships. It is interesting how often this is the case with non-normative communities.

2066 Young people's exposure in schools to messages of empowerment, hard work, aspiration  
2067 and resilience (Ringrose 2007), and the need to stand on their own two feet and look to  
2068 themselves alone, needs questioning. We have seen how these individualist practices of  
2069 aspiration, success and disappointment are accompanied by potential loneliness as an ever  
2070 present companion for young people caught up in these institutionalised dynamics.  
2071 Throughout this period of research, the circulation of powerful media discourses that frame  
2072 success and failure in achieving ones aspirations of wealth and happiness in terms of  
2073 individual efforts rather than more complex classed and gendered explanations (Mendick  
2074 Allen & Harvey 2015) has been clear.

2075

## **<1> Section 2: The experience of loneliness**

In March 2019, research conducted by YouGov for The Prince's Trust (2019) showed how unhappiness among young people had been increasing. In response to the statement, 'Life is really worth living', the percentage of the poll who disagreed had doubled from 9 per cent to 18 per cent. 1 in 5 young people are said to experience loneliness. 4 in 20 may not. It is not always clear which statistic is thought to be more serious. Loneliness as a pathology of solitude may, with good support and a caring community, turn out to be transient. An inability to experience loneliness and perhaps therefore an inability to recognise and empathise with this experience in others may be an equally serious and under recognised pathology.

In the chapters that follow, we discuss what we learned during our study about young people's experience of loneliness. Beginning from what has been termed the 'normative loneliness' associated with transitions we present more fully some of the experiences of pain, grief and loss which seem accompany loneliness, as well as some of the experiences of being singled out as not normal, as 'different.' In doing so, we draw extensively on thinking from a diverse range of feminist and queer thinkers. We draw on Judith Butler's discussion of the practices which produce norms, and their disruption. It is the case that the repeated rehearsal and citation of ideas of 'normative transition' itself reproduces an exclusionary norm which in turn intensifies loneliness. In responding to such exclusionary norms, much can be learned from the 'trans\*' community and from the youth work developed there. Since the possibility of experiencing loneliness must be faced as an aspect of all transitions, the active work of creating community arises in response to such loneliness. A recognition

2098 of the exclusionary power of normativity paradoxically opens up a set of new spaces and  
2099 practices for a new sense of community to come into being, founded in difference.

2100 Also important in this section of the book are the discussion of shame and stigma and again  
2101 we are indebted to Imogen Tyler's work here and that of other feminist scholars. The  
2102 understanding of affect and in particular its classed nature was developed initially by a  
2103 number of feminist writers, especially Beverley Skeggs who mobilised the work of Bourdieu  
2104 to deepen the understanding of the power of class-ification and the classed nature of  
2105 practices of distinction and privilege. In Skeggs' thinking, institutions and privileges produce  
2106 quite real affects and effects, durably inscribed in beliefs. Skeggs captured the complexity of  
2107 how emotion works in sustaining habits and practices. Shame as an emotion conjures an  
2108 impending future in the body as if it has already happened. A person feeling shame feels  
2109 'I'm dead. I'm done for.' This sense of frozenness, deadness or stuckness can also be  
2110 associated with the shame of victimisation. Following this line of thinking/feeling, the  
2111 impact of shame is a kind of re-traumatising: it renders us fearful of experiencing again the  
2112 violation of a boundary. We become fearful that in being shamed a further boundary  
2113 violation will occur and that there will be a re-enactment of the original violence. We  
2114 therefore hide in shame. And so the paradox, that shaming and shame, with its  
2115 accompanying loneliness, is a profoundly social event and happening which constructs a  
2116 social isolation (Skeggs & Loveday 2012).

2117 Audre Lorde's work and its development in bodies of 'queer theory' provides the framing for  
2118 the chapter on 'Being left out' and offers a powerful strategy of response to such framing  
2119 which needs to be worked with actively. Lorde's essays were inspirational bodies of writing  
2120 for the women's movement of the early 1980's and are being re-engaged with now. Her

2121 affirmation of the ontological grounds of difference and its existence as a source of  
2122 creativity provides the basis for an understanding of the cruelty that is inflicted when  
2123 distortions of difference which exclude and oppress become powerful. The energy of her  
2124 writing shows the ways in which the apparently frozen and solid states associated with  
2125 shame are unsettled in joyful movements which affirm the lives of those otherwise seen as  
2126 weird outsiders. Such joyfulness may be connected to the sources of joyful extension of  
2127 capacities discussed in relation to the philosopher Spinoza in the final chapter in this section  
2128 which considers the experience of online connection.

2129

2130

2131

2132

## 2133 <1> Chapter 7: Transitions

### 2134 <2> Youth loneliness and transition

2135 'My sister's about to start at secondary school. I hope she makes some friends.'

2136 (Manchester researcher)

2137 'You can't keep running to mummy and daddy' (Young person, Norwich).

2138 Changing schools, passing and failing exams, going to college, starting work, moving out  
2139 from a childhood home, breaking up with a first girlfriend or boyfriend; all of these are  
2140 considered by sociologists and social psychologists as routine moments in the lives of young  
2141 people. They are considered to be moments of 'normative loneliness.' Times when, it might  
2142 be said, loneliness is only to be expected. They are moments sometimes marked by rituals  
2143 and rites of passage, which in themselves may be occasions of acute loneliness: a results  
2144 day; a school prom; 'the keys to the door'; stag and hen parties. In this chapter, we explore  
2145 these everyday moments of potential loneliness in the lives of young people.

2146 Moments of transition throughout the life course have clearly been recognised by social  
2147 psychologists as moments of potential loneliness, and in other studies times such as  
2148 retirement, children leaving home, leaving work for a period of maternity leave, as well as  
2149 bereavement and becoming a widow or widower have been given as examples of such  
2150 transitions (Perlman & Pelau 1982; Qualter et al. 2013). The time of transition is a time of  
2151 change, when some aspects of experience can be let go of and responses to experience can  
2152 be reconfigured.

2153 'Youth' as a life stage has been routinely analysed by sociologists as the period of transition  
2154 between childhood and adulthood. In contemporary neo-liberal conditions, this transition is

2155 recognised as an extended period, often continuing well into the twenties. This is also  
2156 discussed in terms such as 'broken' or 'complex' transitions, which refer to young people's  
2157 difficulties in movement into adult roles and to this happening at a comparatively young  
2158 age. Independence of income, housing, and the formation of adult relationships, including  
2159 the raising of a family, are the key markers of adult status. In conditions of austerity in the  
2160 UK, it is very evident that achieving adult status is harder and harder for young people. In  
2161 the UK currently, a million more 21-30 year olds live at home with their parents than did a  
2162 decade ago (Mohdin 2019). Rents are so high that this prevents many from saving towards a  
2163 deposit on a house, and half of this age group do not own their own home. The abolition of  
2164 the Education Maintenance Allowance in 2010, which encouraged young people to stay in  
2165 education post 16, and the introduction of student loans that pay fees but provide little  
2166 towards the cost of living has deepened continuing financial dependence on 'the bank of  
2167 mum and dad' for some, and on debt for many more others. This has a further impact on  
2168 the possibility of starting a family and on the conditions under which this happens. As a  
2169 result, this period of change, always a demanding one, is now extremely elongated and  
2170 complex for many. The normative loneliness associated with these change processes is in a  
2171 sense expected, and also expected to be transient. However, the experience of loneliness  
2172 over what is now often a long period can more easily become chronic and hard to shift. And  
2173 given that 'youth' itself has been defined as neither one thing (childhood) nor the other  
2174 (adulthood) but as transition, it may come to be seen as nothing but change and  
2175 paradigmatically more lonely than the more settled states on either side of it. This  
2176 identification of 'youth' with the movement and sometimes turbulence of change could also  
2177 underline the tendency to associate a more intense kind of access to existential loneliness  
2178 with this period of our lives.

2179 Both the conceptualisation of normative transitions and critiques of this approach have a  
2180 long history in youth studies. The idea of a transition is increasingly open to question as the  
2181 markers of social transition – finding steady employment, living independently, starting a  
2182 family – can be argued to have all but lost their normative force amidst the fluid social  
2183 relations of liquid modernity (Bauman 2000). Some analysts now focus on ‘pathways’ and  
2184 ‘choice biographies’ – a conceptualisation which emphasises young people’s agency but is  
2185 no less normative (Ball, Macrae & Maguire 2013). Such terms suggest that a generational  
2186 shift and change which occurs in social relations is less coherent than it was previously  
2187 thought to be; individual differences are more strongly experienced than class solidarities in  
2188 the processes involved in that generational shift. These are the forms taken by ‘transitions’  
2189 in liquid modernity.

2190 In education research, transition is also discussed in a more specific way, to refer to the  
2191 move between schools at age 12. Since our research was undertaken, this has been  
2192 highlighted as a moment when reported loneliness among young people spikes, as it also  
2193 does between the ages 18 and 21 (ONS 2018). The move between school and sixth form,  
2194 and between sixth form and college/university were also significant in our study.

2195 The discussion of the normative and of consequent social abjection by feminist philosophers  
2196 has played a significant role in the background thinking for this study. It is important both to  
2197 recognise that the repeated citation of particular practices is what forms a normative  
2198 practice, and that these citations can be subverted, as experience that cannot be  
2199 suppressed and which exists below the level of articulacy emerges to form the grounds for  
2200 change. In what follows, as the normative moments of transition are explored, it is



2201 important to consider both the everyday ways in which norms concerning transitions are  
2202 practiced and the ways in which the subversion and unsettling of them begins.

2203 Finally, we need to draw attention to the temporality of transitions: the way transitions exist  
2204 in time as momentary and extended experiences. The research team noticed that  
2205 transitions can be big or small, and the experience of loneliness can be fleeting but intense  
2206 in small 'in between' moments and places. The time between the end of school and the  
2207 night; the beginning and end of the weekend; Christmas and New Year; holidays; Valentine's  
2208 Day; the more major and hegemonic timings of school transitions and school/ college/  
2209 university/ work transitions; moving city; ending a relationship with foster carers; ending a  
2210 romantic relationship: each of these is a very specific and often only a passing moment,  
2211 though these moments vary in lengths. Recognising these temporalities reveals a sense of  
2212 moments of loneliness emerging in gaps in the flow of the social and sometimes opening up  
2213 into a more enduring sense of sadness or isolation.

2214 In later chapters of this book, we explore how practices of friendship and association  
2215 emerge in response to the loneliness associated with difference and with youth transitions.

2216 In what follows, we consider in turn particular aspects of youth as transition and the  
2217 loneliness accompanying it that emerged in our study.

## 2218 **<2> Starting secondary school**

2219 On one occasion (due to a misunderstanding!), the research team met with a group of  
2220 children who were in the last year of primary school. It was striking how easy it was for  
2221 them to talk about loneliness compared to the teenagers we met with. It seemed likely that  
2222 the moment of starting secondary school, which is also a time of change, of leaving

2223 childhood behind, accompanied by bodily changes and changed expectations of how young  
2224 people cope with life's challenges, can potentially be a lonely time.

2225 The stories we heard about loneliness at this point of transition to secondary school were  
2226 often about finding a peer group:

2227 'He started smoking with a group just to fit in as he doesn't fit in anywhere else. He's  
2228 frightened of being alone and it causes really bad anxiety so smoking lets him be part  
2229 of something. Maybe he won't be the one person who stands out, who always has his  
2230 headphones on. So he hangs around with the group smoking, but he still feels alone.'  
2231 (Melanie about her brother, Manchester)

2232 'In her first year at secondary school she finds it difficult to make friends. In the school  
2233 summer holidays, hoping to make friends, she goes with some other girls drinking on the  
2234 streets, gets very drunk and is picked up by the police. She tries to get away from this  
2235 group but is bullied by them. After this she becomes very frightened and isolated and  
2236 depressed and moves to a different school.' (Sumaiya, aged 23, Manchester)

2237 For each of these young people at the start of adolescence, the anxiety associated with  
2238 being alone led them to connections which deepened their difficulties: one starts smoking,  
2239 the other starts drinking on the streets, and these strategies only make matters worse, or at  
2240 minimum do not help. At this stage, they had few other resources or strategies with which  
2241 to respond. However, the sources of this anxiety may lie in the question of what it means to  
2242 conform to a set of normative practices and the potential impossibility of doing so. There  
2243 are many connections between 'being an outsider' and the experience of anxiety and of  
2244 loneliness.

2245 Anxiety has been described as a feeling of dread, a feeling of being 'on-edge', and it has  
2246 numerous physical accompaniments. These feelings can have a strong impact, including a  
2247 response of social withdrawal, avoiding or losing contact with friends and family, and even  
2248 avoiding the places that are associated with anxiety. At one extreme, this can be the basis of  
2249 a refusal to go to school. Paradoxically, it can be argued that the stigmatising of the state of  
2250 'aleness' makes loneliness all the more likely. The societal failure to nurture the capacity  
2251 to be alone makes the state of loneliness still more painful.

2252 One young woman (aged about 15) spoke about the isolation that she had expressed in the  
2253 first two years of secondary school in the following way, as recorded in research fieldnotes:

2254         She explained that in her early teens she was very unhappy and lonely but had no  
2255         way of expressing this. She would create chaos in the classroom and on the  
2256         corridors, and had made public displays attempting to hurt herself, threatening to  
2257         jump out of windows or throw herself downstairs. C. said she now recognises that  
2258         she was extremely naughty and badly behaved to draw attention to herself; but that  
2259         this made other kids wary of her, they left her alone. Although in time and with  
2260         support she was able to stop the disruptive behaviour, by now she had become very  
2261         isolated. She became that lonely kid wearing headphones. Headphones on, listening  
2262         to music: it seems rude at first but when you get know them you realise that it isn't.  
2263         She said: 'I would rather be alone with music, it is an escape. (Research fieldnotes  
2264         based on Carol's story, Manchester)

2265 C's distressed and distressing behaviour, creating chaos and publicly hurting herself, was  
2266 accompanied by loneliness, and further intensified her loneliness, even when it stopped  
2267 being externalised and became introjected. Her moment of calming down – or, more likely,

2268 of internalising her distress – probably allowed her to stay in mainstream school and avoid  
2269 the experience of joining a Pupil Referral Unit. It did not make her less isolated, but it  
2270 possibly did remove one further contributing factor to loneliness among young people: the  
2271 experience of being classified as ‘NEET’.

2272 ‘NEET’ is one of the most powerful policy classifications to have entered the professional  
2273 jargon of welfare and education professionals: Not in Employment, Education or Training.  
2274 The experience of being removed from or falling out of the education system, as would no  
2275 doubt have happened for this young woman had her disruptive behaviour in the school  
2276 continued, is also potentially a condition of loneliness. Once out of the system for a period  
2277 of years, it becomes very difficult to reconnect. It is not only already existing distress that  
2278 can cause young people to become difficult for the system to hold. Random events and  
2279 accidents of life that lead to time off school can also contribute. A significant reason that  
2280 young people lose contact with friends and peer groups is through long term and chronic  
2281 illness. Not everyone who has this experience falls out of the system, but there can still be  
2282 costs in terms of social isolation. And just as transition between primary and secondary  
2283 school is a moment of change, so are the moments between secondary school and college,  
2284 between college and university, and, eventually, for most people, the moment when the  
2285 education system is left behind and the world of earning a living (or not) shapes experience.

2286 ‘I had significant periods in hospital during secondary school. I became obsessed  
2287 with studying and not getting behind with my work. I did very well in exams  
2288 eventually but I found it hard to make friends; I didn’t fit in and I was always putting  
2289 my foot in it. People didn’t like me hanging around with them and told me to get  
2290 lost.’ (John, Manchester)

2291 In this context, it may be that identities of ‘outsider’ or various ‘geek’ identities become  
2292 better fits for an individual who is making sense of their isolation.

2293 Leaving behind the pressures of secondary school, establishing a personal sense of self,  
2294 making new friends and affirming emergent adult identities are important markers of  
2295 transition which can very easily be both supported and interrupted by life events.  
2296 Disappointment can accompany exam results, early relationships often break up, relatives  
2297 and friends may have negative reactions to ‘coming out’. This experience is explored  
2298 further, in subsequent chapters but here it is sufficient to note how strongly the narrative of  
2299 adventure and positive opportunities at the threshold of adult life can mask difficulties and  
2300 distress.

2301 ‘I stayed on in the sixth form into the third year when all my friends had left school  
2302 and gone on to do a gap year or gone to university. I knew I would be leaving soon  
2303 and so I didn’t bother making new friends. I missed the old friends.’ (Maya, aged 19,  
2304 Manchester)

2305 The institution of the gap year is promoted in terms of individual development and  
2306 advancement, backpacking travel and enlightenment, benefitting both the self and  
2307 impoverished communities around the world. This is how it is discussed on the Universities  
2308 and Colleges Admissions Service website in 2019:

2309

2310 The gap year offers you the opportunity to gain skills and experiences, while giving  
2311 you time to reflect and focus on what you want to do next.

2312 A productive gap year can be valuable on your CV – many employers value the  
2313 experiences students have gained if they've actively managed their time, set  
2314 themselves goals, and stretched themselves.

2315 A gap year can also enhance your higher education studies – if you decide to apply  
2316 for uni, you could tailor your gap year to relate it to the subject area you plan to  
2317 study.

2318 Admissions tutors know that some students may take a little time to adjust to  
2319 studying again, but many former gap year students are generally more focused and  
2320 responsible. (UCAS 2019)

2321 Whilst the powerful message about a gap year is that it is a time for exciting adventures, it  
2322 can be a very lonely time:

2323 I'm starting to feel very lonely on my gap year. Though my gap year was unplanned  
2324 (missed my firm, clearing was a nightmare), I'm starting to regret not choosing to go  
2325 to university. My tactic was to take a year out, re-sit some modules, get into a better  
2326 university, travel and do some things I'm passionate about. With the lack of friends I  
2327 have around me at this particular moment in time (most are at university), I feel very  
2328 lonely and it's quite depressing. All I ever seem to do is jam on the net and watch TV.  
2329 (Ann, posted on internet site, 2017)

2330

2331 'My daughter would have been much better going straight to university. She got A  
2332 stars and is going to a top university next September. She really fancied travelling,  
2333 but she didn't want to go on her own. She's been working in a café earning money,  
2334 but none of her friends have any money so she's ended up not going, being stuck at

2335 home on her own, nothing much to do, getting bored and a bit lonely.’ (Youth  
2336 Worker, Manchester)

2337 **<2> Moving**

2338 The experience of being new and being an outsider that occurs with the transition to High  
2339 School, also occurs when a family moves through migration, or for work. It can also come  
2340 about when a young person leaves the family they grew up in, for example by moving into  
2341 care or moving to establish their own home, perhaps by going to college or university. Not  
2342 everyone who has arrived new in a place has experienced trauma, but the experience of  
2343 isolation can make a person hyper-sensitive to hostility from others over time.

2344 ‘No-one else from my family has ever been to University and no-one else lives over here. I  
2345 didn’t know any-one and I knew I had to do something to get out of my room so I eventually  
2346 joined a football team.’ (Danny, aged 23, Manchester)

2347 The psychosocial costs of being the first in a family to go to university and the losses as well  
2348 as the gains that this involves have been too little recognised. The possibility of accessing a  
2349 continuing form of care and support becomes put into question for many young people,  
2350 especially amongst those who are breaking from family tradition. The potential loneliness of  
2351 student years does not however only apply to those who are first generation university  
2352 students:

2353

2354 ‘If you asked me what represents my feeling of loneliness most, it’s when I’ve been  
2355 in all weekend on my own and there’s left over pizza in the fridge at the end of the  
2356 weekend, because I’ve ordered a pizza but I can’t eat it all. I came here to go to  
2357 university, but it didn’t work out. I’ve left home and don’t want to go back to the

2358 country town I come from, but I'm new here. Anyway I've lost contact with my  
2359 school friends. At my loneliest, I didn't go out. I just stayed in and watched TV.  
2360 Mostly I'm flicking channels, doing video games, doing online stuff, looking for  
2361 something I'm interested in. I don't have a steady job. I get bits and pieces as a  
2362 freelancer. But at the moment I'm working at a call centre, where I have to put up  
2363 with a lot of rudeness. I don't like the people I work with so I don't know them and I  
2364 don't want to know them. It's all turned out so much harder than I expected and I'm  
2365 not making much money. I feel a failure at times and I don't want my parents to  
2366 know.' (Clayton, aged 21, Manchester)

2367 **<2> Starting work**

2368 Many young people enter the labour market by working part-time or undertaking voluntary  
2369 work or unpaid internships. Even when they are well qualified, they almost certainly lack  
2370 experience, and unspoken expectations about team work and communication skills can lead  
2371 them to become very uncertain and potentially isolated in the workplace. Contemporary  
2372 employment patterns are in any case isolating as well as often exploitative of the young. For  
2373 example the minimum wage remains set at lower levels for those under 25 than for others.  
2374 There are many aspects of working life that are unfamiliar to a young person just starting  
2375 work, from the surroundings of a workplace to practical matters such as working time,  
2376 breaks, pay and tax, working conditions, dress codes, and health and safety in the  
2377 workplace. In addition, matters such as manager's expectations around performance,  
2378 including probation and processes for feedback and appraisal and lines of authority at work  
2379 are experienced for the first time. It is very important that young workers know where they  
2380 can go for help when difficulties arise, that they know their trade union rights and that they



2381 are supported in getting to know and integrate with older colleagues. Being called 'an  
2382 apprentice' can be a source of anxiety and insecurity. One young person from Unionlearn's  
2383 Voice of the Apprentice network articulated the need for support very clearly:

2384 'I want a supervisor who's around to support me. When you're on rotation, trying different  
2385 bits of the business, it can be really helpful to keep the same manager so you've always got  
2386 a base to come back to for advice you trust' (apprentice from unionlearn's 'voice of the  
2387 apprentice' network).

2388 In conditions of precarious employment on zero hours contracts, many young people lack  
2389 such support during their transition into the work place. Even for graduates working in the  
2390 new digital industries or creating their own start-ups, the conditions of work can be very  
2391 isolating and support networks may remain persistently virtual in comparison to the close  
2392 presence of others in the networks of childhood.

## 2393 <2> Independent living

2394 Some members of the core research team had moved to the city to find work, whilst others  
2395 had returned home after university. Some had dropped out of university. Almost half of the  
2396 population still do not continue into higher education and for them, the need to establish  
2397 independent living arrangements is not supported by a transition to university. In the UK  
2398 this transition to independent living arrangements happens all the more rapidly– at age 16-  
2399 18 - for young people who have been raised in the care system.

2400 One young person spoke of the loneliness of remaining in the city and not returning home  
2401 after university:

2402 'After uni, six months ago, I decided not to go back to the place in the East Midlands  
2403 where I come from and to get my own flat. So I had moved out of student

2404 accommodation and into a place of my own – a really cool place in the Northern  
2405 Quarter – but I didn't know anyone and I felt really on my own. I do know lots of  
2406 people here: I work and I have friends from Uni but it's not like being back at home  
2407 where I was born and where my family are and where I know everyone. Everyone  
2408 says this is a friendly city, but I don't think so' (Pete, Manchester)

2409 The fact that many young adults are forced through financial necessity to move back home  
2410 is also however a cause of loneliness that leads to them feeling cut off from their peers. One  
2411 young woman whose sister had moved back home after being at university because she was  
2412 unable to find work and could not afford to pay rent, talked about feeling lonely in this way:

2413 'I feel worried because my sister who went to Uni ahead of me has gone back to our  
2414 parents' house now and she is really unhappy about that: she says she has changed  
2415 but they can't help it, they still treat her as a kid now she's gone back, and also she  
2416 can't have friends round, and any way she has no money to go out with... I wonder if  
2417 it's worth it, after all.' (Cathy, Manchester)

## 2418 <2> Romantic relationships

2419 Moving into a romantic relationship and then marriage or a committed relationship and  
2420 cohabitation is seen as a significant mark of adulthood. For young people who remain single  
2421 longer than their peer group, issues of emotional loneliness emerge as important. Dave in  
2422 Manchester said:

2423 "I really really wanted to have a girlfriend. That was more important than who she was.  
2424 Perhaps its not surprising we broke up. But I'm really lonely now. Maybe I will just get a  
2425 dog".

2426

2427 Even when it is recognised that it is possible to experience loneliness within a relationship  
2428 and to have a sense of connection and support whilst living alone, remaining single for a  
2429 long period can be accompanied by a loss of other friendship support as peers orientate to  
2430 the nuclear family.

2431 Even though the 'milestones' of transition are more various now and the time for forming  
2432 relationships is extended, the pain associated with potentially failing to meet the milestones  
2433 is often both strong and isolating. As will be discussed in a later chapter, while romantic  
2434 breakups in teenage years are often dismissed and the pain involved minimised, they can  
2435 lead to a long term chronic loneliness: 'I thought I'd have a home of my own by now, and a  
2436 wife and a car and it isn't happening...I'm so frightened of being on my own for the rest of  
2437 my life.' (Pete, Manchester, 28)

## 2438 <2> The play 'Missing' and the character Jessica

2439 The Loneliness Project research team's method of developing witness accounts, through the  
2440 creation of scenarios and characters by individuals and small groups, culminated in the  
2441 production of an immersive theatre performance, 'Missing'. One significant feature of  
2442 'Missing', salient for this chapter, is the process through which the main character was  
2443 created. In the middle stage of the research, scenarios of loneliness that had been shared in  
2444 other groups of young people were shared in the core research team. This led to further  
2445 reflection and further story telling. In this process, a good deal of written material was  
2446 generated and it is this which is drawn on throughout the current book.

2447 Jana Wendler and Trish Coleman were the Creators of 'Missing'. Jana had joined the  
2448 research team from the early stages, in particular to introduce a playful 'walking'  
2449 methodology. Both Jana and Trish engaged further in the process mid-way through the year

2450 in which the research took place and supported and further developed the process of story  
2451 telling and elaboration of the research methods. In doing this, they were drawing on  
2452 methods that have roots in applied theatre on the one hand, and feminist inspired 'memory  
2453 work' on the other.

2454 In applied theatre, the practice of story boarding is common, as a means of enabling both  
2455 identification and dis-identification with a story that participants wish to share. In 'memory  
2456 work', the process of dis-identification, generalisation and abstraction is supported by a  
2457 move from first person to third person accounts. Firstly, material that had been generated  
2458 earlier on in the project was chosen and reworked in the third person. It was then shared  
2459 again in a workshop with the research team, and stories were reflected on and retold, and  
2460 other stories were generated.

2461 As a result of this process, a decision was taken (by Trish and Jana) to create an immersive  
2462 theatre performance which would stimulate further engagement on the tour. This was  
2463 based on the character of Jessica. Jessica is a girl of 17 who is doing well at school: her  
2464 predicted grades are good, and she is hoping to go to university. She has a job in a café, a  
2465 secure family life and a group of friends. There seems to be little wrong with her life. But she  
2466 goes 'missing', and the stage is set in an incident room of the police station, in which teams  
2467 of young people become the investigators, looking for the clues as to what has led to her  
2468 disappearance and where she might be. The choice to focus the story on an ordinary girl  
2469 who is going through many quite mundane but very common and recognisable transitions  
2470 was made deliberately in response to the persistence of the 'transitions' theme.

2471 Moments of transition have been identified as moments of potential loneliness because  
2472 they are times when established connection is interrupted and new connections have yet to

2473 be formed. This is the case throughout life. In the period of the transition to adulthood  
2474 however, when this is experienced for the first time, loneliness may be felt especially  
2475 intensely.

2476 Whilst there are now neurological accounts of the intensity of feeling in adolescence, it is  
2477 possible also to recognise this intensity whilst refusing to reduce the experience of it. This  
2478 experience has been recognised and expressed most by writers such as Virginia Woolf and  
2479 Toni Morrison. Though loneliness is terrifying there is something precious about it. As Sula  
2480 says in Toni Morrison's novel of that name, 'My lonely is mine. Nobody can take it from me.'  
2481 However ordinary these normative transitions maybe, the loneliness and pain associated  
2482 with them can be acute and deserves attention, especially as it may become the start of a  
2483 more enduring and chronic loneliness.

2484

## **<1> Chapter 8: Loss, Grief and Loneliness**

‘My dog died and I felt very very lonely.’ (Guy, aged 11, Stoke)

‘At my grandad’s funeral I felt very very lonely.’ (Pete, aged 12, Stoke)

The children in the youth group we met in Stoke were younger than any of the other groups we met and, in contrast to all the other groups we engaged with, found it easy to acknowledge times when they felt lonely. The difficulty in acknowledging vulnerability in adolescence and young adulthood when young people are supposed to be learning to ‘stand on their own two feet’ is an important theme of this study. The youngest people we met during the course of the research seemed to be the ones who found it easiest to speak about loneliness, and they immediately connected this experience with bereavement. In this chapter, we move to look in depth at some of the most extreme and difficult experiences associated with loneliness.

Loss and its accompanying loneliness has often been associated with the bereavements of later life, but loss, bereavement and grief are also strongly present in early experiences of loneliness. This may be a result of experiencing the death of someone loved, but loss also occurs with the experience of parental divorce and separation, or of moving into foster care. Sometimes loneliness results from losing a feeling of safety and

2507 good connection which happens as the result of violence. Then the stigma, shame and  
2508 self-reproach associated with becoming a victim of violence is redoubled in a further  
2509 stigma associated with loneliness. Drug treatments for grief are currently being piloted  
2510 and it seems possible that grief, like loneliness, may become medicalised rather than  
2511 being accepted as a necessary and valuable though painful element of our reaction to  
2512 loss. This chapter explores the loneliness associated with loss and grief; and also the  
2513 loneliness associated with shame and social isolation.

2514 Some of these experiences of loneliness associated with loss are acute but momentary, and  
2515 they show that loneliness is an unavoidable aspect of being alive and grieving the loss of  
2516 some-one loved. They are not something to be ashamed of and yet loneliness itself is often  
2517 a source of shame and stigma in a world that seems to require the performance of  
2518 happiness and success. But when loneliness is experienced as part of multiple losses and at  
2519 a time of change and transition, it can become a trigger for and/or an accompaniment to a  
2520 serious and persistent life crisis.

2521 The loneliness of approaching the reality of death for the first time, the processes of  
2522 grief and the feelings associated with a break in connection with someone on whom we  
2523 have depended, perhaps for our life, can be intensely felt at any age. Perhaps this is  
2524 especially the case among teenagers experiencing the death of someone loved for the  
2525 first time.

2526 Grief is the expression of our sadness associated with the loss of some-one we love; the  
2527 more complex the relationship we have had with that person, the more complex the  
2528 grief. Well established accounts of grief draw on the model first established 50 years  
2529 ago by Elizabeth Kubler Ross (1969) and speak of the processes of denial, anger,

2530 bargaining, depression and acceptance that moving through grief involves. They do not  
2531 however speak of the loneliness and potential isolation that accompanies sadness, well  
2532 attested in the many variations of the harsh, popular saying: 'Laugh and the world laughs  
2533 with you, weep and you weep alone.'

2534 Grief is a process that may enable comfort to be sought and found. Such comfort may  
2535 include an appreciation of the continuing power of the love that has been lost or the life  
2536 that is ended. Of course this is unlikely to be experienced often in so simple a form. Like  
2537 many of the other losses which are experienced in life and which are complex, grief  
2538 following loss as a result of death also takes complex forms. The strategies and resources  
2539 that are available to us and that we develop for responding to such loss for the first time  
2540 provide a pattern for our responses through life; support in relation to this in adolescence  
2541 will therefore be of great benefit. The wider social response to such loss shapes this context  
2542 of support. The prospect of the medicalisation and pathologisation of grief and its  
2543 accompanying loneliness affects the experience too.

2544 In the rest of this chapter we will explore moments in the encounter with loss and grief  
2545 that we heard about frequently which are related to violence, trauma and abuse, in  
2546 both interpersonal and systemic terms. Very many of the stories of loneliness we heard  
2547 involved a loss of connection, and sometimes this involved the death of some-one  
2548 loved, or it involved a relationship break-up. Such moments are moments of crisis and it  
2549 is at such times, among others, that thoughts of suicide can emerge as a possible  
2550 resolution to a crisis.

## 2551 <2> Attempted suicide

2552



2553           ‘My friend committed suicide: they were being bullied.’ (Sade, aged 15, Salford)

2554

2555   Suicide – both attempted by those we spoke to, and successfully achieved by their  
2556   friends, and a source of terrible loss - arose as a theme in many of the settings we were  
2557   in. It appeared to be an almost natural accompaniment to the theme of loneliness, and  
2558   this fact alone is a witness to the intensity of pain which loneliness can carry. Suicidality  
2559   can be thought of as a sense that life is no longer worth the effort of living, and more  
2560   actively as a desire that life should end. It can be understood as a desire for an ending  
2561   and a break in connection, but it is by no means self-evident that it actually means a  
2562   desire for death as an absolute end. It often accompanies a wish for acute and  
2563   prolonged suffering to end, and a wish to remove oneself as a source of suffering for  
2564   others: ‘they would/will all be better off without me.’ Prolonged loneliness is of course  
2565   one such form of acute and prolonged suffering.

2566   Bullying was often cited as a source of such suffering in the process of the research, and  
2567   in one case we were told that a friend had taken their own life because of bullying.  
2568   However, discussion in the psychology literature concerning bullying and suicidality  
2569   shows that the links between the two are complex. Bullying alone is a not a sufficient  
2570   explanation of suicidality. Those who have been bullied and then bully in their turn,  
2571   however, are particularly prone to suicidality, which emerges from depression, difficult  
2572   family circumstances, overwhelming life events (of which bullying may be one) and a  
2573   feeling of helplessness and lack of meaning. During this study we found that attempted  
2574   suicide was a particularly common experience among young people in the LGBTQI\*  
2575   youth work settings we worked with and we related this to their complex experiences

2576 of homophobia and transphobia.

2577

2578 The theme of suicide and attempted suicide was touched on in most settings we were in. It  
2579 is as if people sensed a connection between the everyday experience of loneliness and the  
2580 extremes of suicidal feeling. This was not something we set out to explore but it was present  
2581 as a theme throughout.

2582

2583 'When my boyfriend dumped me I wanted to kill myself. I felt so alone in the world. I  
2584 was 17. I had just left my high school and I was going to start at sixth form college. I  
2585 ended up taking an overdose in the summer holidays. I was OK. Everybody said it  
2586 was a cry for help, but after that I carried on being very depressed and I hated  
2587 college. I didn't make any friends for ages. My mum is very religious and she just  
2588 couldn't relate to me at that time and I couldn't relate to her. Things are better for  
2589 me now. I passed my 'A' Levels and went away to university and I have made some  
2590 good friends now.' (Emily, aged 23, Manchester)

2591

2592 Support after a suicide attempt is often provided in youth work settings but not all  
2593 suicidal young people have access to such settings. Specialist services such as  
2594 Samaritans and Young Minds can give support to the supporters who undertake the  
2595 being with and alongside the suicidal young person. One youth worker explained:

2596 'When they are going through it, they don't need you to talk...just to listen and  
2597 keep them safe. You might go with them to A and E or visit them in hospital; it's

2598           the showing that you care and that their life is of value to you that can make all  
2599           the difference.’ (Youth Worker, LGBT project)

2600

2601   Responses to death as a result of suicide may include a sense of guilt concerning  
2602   whether more could have been done to support the one who died, and hurt involving a  
2603   sense of rejection and of wounding (‘how could they have done this to us...’). The  
2604   impossibility of finding any other release from a cycle of suffering on the part of the one  
2605   who has died; the difficulty in finding words to express the response to such a death;  
2606   and the shame involved in naming death as a result of suicide: all of these are elements  
2607   that speak of the loneliness of which suicide seems to be an epitome. It can be  
2608   understood and experienced as an absolute failure of community, connection and  
2609   belonging.

2610   The ending of a first intimate relationship can be a time of desperation and yet it is  
2611   commonly discussed as trivial (puppy love; ‘plenty more fish in the sea’) or character  
2612   building (‘what doesn’t kill you makes you stronger’). Because early intimate  
2613   relationships are often of short duration, and because break up at this stage is a  
2614   common experience endured by most people, it is all too readily assumed that the  
2615   important message is to ‘get over it.’ Nevertheless, such early break ups are a source of  
2616   intense pain, and relationship break-up is the most frequently cited cause of attempted  
2617   suicide.

2618   Depression frequently follows such a break up, especially for the person who has not  
2619   instigated it, and then the loneliness that follows naturally from such a break up is  
2620   intensified by the loneliness that accompanies depression. A characteristic lack of

2621 empathy ('time you got over it'), coupled with an inability on the part of the depressed  
2622 person to trust others with their experience and a tendency to push others away all  
2623 intensify loneliness.

2624 The ending of a first romantic relationship potentially echoes other losses that may  
2625 have occurred throughout childhood, and it is these multiple losses which can  
2626 contribute to suicidality. Parental separation and divorce is not only potentially a source of  
2627 loneliness for the separating couple but also for the children. While the loneliness of adults  
2628 is often discussed, the experience of children after parental divorce and separation is more  
2629 often considered in terms of practical arrangements. The emotional impact of divorce and  
2630 separation on children may be minimised, since it is clearly the case that witnessing abuse,  
2631 neglect or even simply prolonged conflict between parents who remain married also creates  
2632 loneliness for children. The loneliness in each case comes from both a physical and  
2633 psychological absence of parents where presence and closeness might be expected: 'My  
2634 parents split up and I never see my dad. I really miss him.' (Frankie, aged 16, Stoke)

2635 Children brought up in care must endure the loss of their birth families and also have a very  
2636 difficult transition to independence at a young age. The transition to leaving care begins at  
2637 age 16, and although children who have been in care are entitled to some support until they  
2638 are 25, this is minimal and many young people find themselves living independently and  
2639 without any wider circle of support from the age of 16. Children who are brought up in care  
2640 experience a sense of not being worthy of unconditional closeness, and this is the already  
2641 shaky foundation on which the crisis of leaving care occurs: 'When I had to leave my foster  
2642 family... I went off the rails. I had to get my own flat. I was on my own all the time.'  
2643 (Mohammed, aged 18, Manchester)

2644 **<2> Violence, trauma and loneliness**

2645 There is considerable knowledge of the way that being a victim of bullying, abuse and  
2646 violence is accompanied by shame and self-reproach, by silencing and a feeling of stigma,  
2647 and by anger. There is perhaps less recognition of how this shame and self-reproach also  
2648 involve loneliness.

2649

2650 'I went to an all boys school and I became a very aggressive person quite quickly in  
2651 that school because it was a matter of deciding to be violent to them before they  
2652 were violent to you. I was massively picked on because of my disability. They were  
2653 already calling me 'crip' and telling 'crip jokes.' So I started bullying them before they  
2654 started on bullying me. Didn't help though. I was still on my own.

2655 There was another boy who was really camp and he was the only one like that and  
2656 massively bullied and he was beaten up. So I knew I had to protect myself and I  
2657 became aggressive. All that...and the fact that my stepfather was a horrible violent  
2658 man meant I eventually got excluded from school and I went to live with my nan.

2659 Now I'm like a shell. I'm like a shell. I just go through life. I'm numb 24/7. Things  
2660 happen, some of it's bad, some good. I just go straight through it. I've always had  
2661 that mentality, just man up and deal with it... you're on your own...It's only coming  
2662 here [to 42<sup>nd</sup> Street] the last few years that I've learned to open up. I don't know  
2663 what you've been through. I can't talk about other people. I've got that old school  
2664 mentality of DEAL. WITH. IT.' (Mark, aged 25, Manchester)

2665

2666 In this account, the moves away from and towards violence are first of all depicted as moves  
2667 Mark makes to protect himself from violent others. His hostility towards others is also  
2668 designed to keep violent others at a distance. The change in patterns of relationship was  
2669 also connected to a change in this young man's family relationships, as his relationship with  
2670 his stepdad was also charged with violence: in the first place, that of his step-father towards  
2671 his mother. The movement away from his mum, from his family home and its violence, was  
2672 no doubt intended to offer him protection. While achieving this, it also increased his sense  
2673 of isolation, and his actual isolation was then reinforced as a result of exclusion from school,  
2674 due to difficult, challenging, and even bullying behaviour.

2675 Mark's resulting self-account, "Now I'm like a shell. I'm like a shell. I just go through life. I'm  
2676 numb 24/7", is an eloquent reference to the emptiness associated with trauma and also  
2677 with loneliness. The sense of keeping oneself apart from others soon becomes a pattern  
2678 that is hard to challenge and incorporates a hyper-vigilance which constantly anticipates  
2679 attack and hostility as soon as a relationship with others is on the cards.

2680 Another young woman gave this account of the experience of living through violence:

2681 'A lot of bad things happened in my life when I was a child, when I was young. I can't  
2682 sleep at night and I am always tired, so often I can't get to places at the right time. I  
2683 cope by walking about on my own late at night and I go to parks on my own. I am not  
2684 usually lonely when I'm on my own. I feel lonely mostly when I am with other  
2685 people. I often just prefer my own company. Why do we judge people for being  
2686 alone? Is it better to be without friends and safe, or with friends and vulnerable? You  
2687 may get to a boundary where the loneliness is beginning to affect your health and  
2688 then a persistent negative train of thought is setting in. I have used a website where I

2689           wrote and posted my own poems as a way of looking after myself. Creativity and  
2690           poetry is a way to let out feelings; you can interact with the page even when you  
2691           can't interact with people.' (Sumaiya, aged 23, Manchester)

2692

2693   This account gives a vivid sense of what is involved in those often used phrases 'resilience'  
2694   and 'coping': Sumaiya has developed a strategy of aloneness which works for her while at  
2695   the same time keeping her isolated. The gravity and persistence of her experience of  
2696   violence has made it difficult for her to share painful experiences with others, and so she  
2697   experiences the feeling of painful separation most when she is with other people. In a life  
2698   that has been marked by hostility and cruelty, it is unsurprising that her courageousness for  
2699   life is at its strongest when she keeps her distance from potentially hostile others and when  
2700   she is extremely cautious in her choices about where she extends her trust.

2701   In sharing these stories, both Mark and Sumaiya have worked through the barriers created  
2702   by shame; the shame of being a victim and/or perpetrator of violence and the shame  
2703   associated with experiencing poor mental health. Shame and shaming is a complex practice  
2704   that has been interpreted in contending accounts by radical scholars and is differentially  
2705   experienced in relation to social power. For those in victimised positions, the impact of  
2706   shame has been analysed as an integral part of the stigma machine at work in neoliberal  
2707   societies (Tyler 2020). This stigma machine produces social abjection. Social disgust at the  
2708   position and pain of powerless populations is produced continuously in discursive and  
2709   material practices. People so positioned experience not only the lack of resource but also  
2710   the pain of being seen as being rubbish, living in 'shit' estates and failing at every test set  
2711   them in the education system. They are represented in 'poverty porn' as benefit cheats and

in policy discourse as ‘troubled families’, their eating patterns are seen as producing appalling uncontrolled obesity and their cultural tastes in music or media are examined for traces of their depravity. All of which is shaming, distancing and controlling in its effects (Jensen & Tyler 2015). Other writers have analysed shaming of the powerful as productive in unsettling the taken for granted perspectives of those in powerful positions. The experience of becoming ashamed from a position of power as against ‘feeling guilty’ is a mechanism through which a yearning for justice may be found. This has particularly been discussed in relation to racism, when ‘white guilt’ is analysed as shoring up the racism it is associated with, as it immobilises and prevents change, whereas shame is seen as an impetus arising in and unsettling powerful positions in order to mobilise and make changes (Sivanandan 1990). Whether shame is mobilised in the form of control in the stigma machine or as an energy for change and social justice, in each case ‘shame’ is recognised as a profoundly social emotion, the quality of which is felt in the body in the form of establishing or unsettling a social boundary and a physical silence (Probyn 2004).

Everyday emotional experiences are privatised and personalised, yet shame as an emotion pushes at the limits of this privatisation as it extends across networks and social groups: the contagiousness of collective affects exposes the breaches in the borders between self and other and means that others who are shamed as I am can be recognised even before a word is spoken. When the affects of shame are linked to victimisation and the enforcement of social hierarchy (as discussed by Jensen and Tyler), so that the border between self and others differently positioned in the hierarchy is not breached but rather enforced in symbolic violence, the shame experienced by the victim is a mark of that violence. This shame is embodied and found in bodily stances that are mutually recognised before their sharedness is expressed.



2736 Furthermore, shaming makes public an experience or wound or aspect of the body (typically  
2737 blood) which by definition should remain inside and private, and this helps engage with the  
2738 issue of why becoming a victim is viscerally experienced as shameful. Many gestures of  
2739 covering over and self-protection and hiding are associated with shame. These gestures may  
2740 be related to the fear of repeated attack or abuse since those in a position of vulnerability  
2741 are by definition easier to attack again. Thus, a silence about experience of violation may be  
2742 a protective factor. Other aspects of the 'field' come into play if abuse is seen as deserved  
2743 by the one who suffers it. And, in situations in which abuse is a repetition of a prior  
2744 traumatic and abusive situation in which we have been made to feel ashamed of ourselves,  
2745 shaming can be mobilised further as a form of punishment.

2746 However, the experience of abjection and symbolic violence contains within it the possibility  
2747 of a revolt. The separation that has been made can be unsettled, as can the 'othering' and  
2748 rendering inhuman that has occurred. When the experience of shame as a victim ceases  
2749 to be privatised and can be recognised with others who suffer similarly, then shame can be  
2750 recognised as a collectivising force. There are moments when those who are routinely  
2751 shamed can refuse to be shamed any longer and turn the shame on those who shame them.

## 2752 <2> The loneliness of exile

2753 Finally in this chapter we will consider an account by a young refugee who joined the  
2754 research project for a few weeks. It has been said that refugees present the fullest example  
2755 of the human capacity to survive despite the greatest of losses and assaults on human  
2756 dignity. Asylum seekers have potentially lost everything – family and friends, social  
2757 networks, home and material belongings, language communities, position, recognition and  
2758 status and a view of the future as potentially consistent with the past. This dislocation is loss

2759 upon loss and to a significant extent is unthinkable, but it can be thought of in part at least  
2760 in terms of a bereavement.

2761 'I arrived in Manchester when I was 14 from Afghanistan. This was the first place I  
2762 came to in the UK. At first I was happy with lots of new friends in a new country. I  
2763 played football in the park with my friends. Then, after a couple of years with my  
2764 foster family, when I was aged 16, the PTSD (Post Traumatic Stress Disorder) kicked  
2765 in. I started behaving strangely and badly and couldn't trust any-one. I had to leave  
2766 my foster family and I live alone. I can't watch television. I'm frightened of seeing  
2767 violent scenes. My mind goes blank a lot and I can't concentrate. I feel nothing.  
2768 Because of this I dropped out of college and the motor vehicle course I was doing. I  
2769 couldn't cope with studying because I can't concentrate. I have no friends now. I  
2770 have very little in the way of belongings and I have no friends but I hang on to my  
2771 life. My life is more to me than any object. If this were not so, I would not be here. I  
2772 am alone all the time. I often feel very very lonely. Sometimes I go to the park and  
2773 just sit or sleep outside as it less frightening for me.' (Irfan, aged 20, Manchester)

2774

2775 There is an emergency created by current systems when people fleeing for survival  
2776 encounter the exclusionary systems of border controls, which are refinements of  
2777 longstanding and racist systems of immigration control, instigated in the old imperial  
2778 heartlands and white colonies at the moment of the 'post'-colonial end of Empire (Wroe,  
2779 Larkin & Maglajilic 2019).

2780 In the UK, the Border Agency imposes a complex set of rules and a hostile environment  
2781 which makes it clear to asylum seekers that they are suspect from the start and that their

2782 presence is not wanted. All this makes the pressure on projects overwhelming to exclude  
2783 asylum seekers from support. Like the asylum seekers themselves, projects that seek to  
2784 support asylum seekers may do so only under limited circumstances, since they have  
2785 'recourse to public funds' only while an asylum claim is being processed and even then only  
2786 of a reduced kind. Irfan's account includes experiences of loss and violence that are hard to  
2787 hear and this fact alone makes him subject to extremes of isolation and loneliness.

2788 In the situation of exile and of experience and fear of repeated trauma, there is the most  
2789 intense loss of family, community, language, familiarity of place and culture. Irfan's  
2790 difficulties arise from the most traumatic circumstances, but the social work and education  
2791 systems he was supported by initially did not recognise this and were unable to continue to  
2792 support him as they were not resourced to do so. This failure of recognition is systemic and  
2793 is what builds the 'hostile environment.' He has become isolated and marginal. Irfan's move  
2794 further and further into the margins of the city is a move that he makes from a sense of a  
2795 need to protect himself, but in doing so he becomes more vulnerable. The fact that he was  
2796 in contact with a housing project at the time of the research was a sign of hope, but he was  
2797 already becoming entrenched in patterns of isolation that will have made it much harder for  
2798 him to re-engage or to be re-engaged with. The trauma and loneliness of fleeing a familiar  
2799 life have been intensified by actively oppressive and neglectful systems both at the border  
2800 and subsequently, when welfare, education and health systems take on the work of the  
2801 Border Agency.

2802 If loneliness requires a response that is a sufficient sense of closeness to meet our  
2803 emotional needs, then the loss of home and the imposition of exile as a result of becoming a

2804 refugee suggests a systemic and definitional form of loneliness. Hence the use of exile is a  
2805 form of punishment.

2806 In this chapter, some of the extreme experiences associated with loneliness among young  
2807 people have been discussed. Although they are experiences that are not common, we have  
2808 shown their significance for discussions of what is problematic in wider social relations and  
2809 for the emerging new narrative about loneliness that we are proposing here.

2810

## 2811 <1> Chapter 9: Being left out

2812

2813

2814 On the Loneliness Playlist created at the start of the research process, Radiohead's song  
2815 'Creep' epitomised the rejection and loneliness of being seen as weirdo and ostracised.  
2816 The sense that 'I don't belong here' resonated throughout the research. Failing to be  
2817 picked for a team...being the one left standing...not succeeding in a competition: these  
2818 may all be commonplace experiences in children's lives, but they are no less painful for  
2819 being common. The misery of a child never picked to play for a team is powerful. The  
2820 song 'Creep' encapsulates the self-hate that is involved with the experience of not  
2821 fitting in.

2822 This chapter presents the experience of being left out and other experiences of not  
2823 fitting in from a variety of perspectives. Ranging from the ways in which children and  
2824 young people are horrid to one another, to how adults maintain control of groups by  
2825 harnessing the power of exclusion, this chapter focuses on the micropolitics of  
2826 exclusion and control.

2827 This chapter also works with the Black feminist Audre Lorde's engagement with  
2828 difference as a source of experience. Audre Lorde's work is now being re-engaged with  
2829 by a new generation of feminist activists and scholars and her essays and poetry are  
2830 being republished (Lorde 1984). An extract from Lorde's extensive writing on this  
2831 subject of responding to difference is worth quoting at length at the beginning of this  
2832 chapter:

2833

2834 Institutionalized rejection of difference is an absolute necessity in a profit  
2835 economy which needs outsiders as surplus people. As members of such an  
2836 economy, we have all been programmed to respond to the human differences  
2837 between us with fear and loathing and to handle that difference in one of three  
2838 ways: ignore it, and if that is not possible, copy it if we think it is dominant, or  
2839 destroy it if we think it is subordinate. But we have no patterns for relating  
2840 across our human differences as equals. As a result, those differences have been  
2841 misnamed and misused in the service of separation and confusion. Certainly  
2842 there are very real differences between us of race, age, and sex. But it is not  
2843 those differences between us that are separating us. It is rather our refusal to  
2844 recognize those differences, and to examine the distortions which result from  
2845 our misnaming them and their effects upon human behavior and expectation.  
2846 Racism, the belief in the inherent superiority of one race over all others and  
2847 thereby the right to dominance. Sexism, the belief in the inherent superiority of  
2848 one sex over the other and thereby the right to dominance. Ageism.  
2849 Heterosexism. Elitism. Classism. It is a lifetime pursuit for each one of us to  
2850 extract these distortions from our living at the same time as we recognize,  
2851 reclaim, and define those differences upon which they are imposed. For we have  
2852 all been raised in a society where those distortions were endemic within our  
2853 living. Too often, we pour the energy needed for recognizing and exploring  
2854 difference into pretending those differences are insurmountable barriers, or that  
2855 they do not exist at all. This results in a voluntary isolation, or false and  
2856 treacherous connections. Either way, we do not develop tools for using human

2857 difference as a springboard for creative change.

2858

2859 The importance of Lorde's work and words in the Women's Liberation Movement of the  
2860 1980s and 90s can carry over into our thinking and praxis in a very different and new  
2861 moment. Children and young people are still learning to fear difference and are forced  
2862 to face its distortions in systems that oppress them and us. Lorde sees the sometimes  
2863 voluntary and sometimes imposed isolation they experience as resulting from treating  
2864 difference as an insurmountable problem rather than as a resource for living creatively.  
2865 This distorted and oppressive response to difference remains a major source of  
2866 loneliness. In this chapter we are considering examples from young people who  
2867 experienced being cold-shouldered without knowing why; from the experience of  
2868 autism; and the experience of 'queer' and trans\* young people.

2869 **<2> Being cold-shouldered**

2870 The feeling of knowing you're not wanted, the feeling of not fitting in, is instant; it can  
2871 grow stronger over time or it can flicker and then fade. It's a feeling in the gut, drawing  
2872 on a desire to fit in, which is instantaneous with knowing that you do not and cannot.  
2873 You know you sound it out, that difference, every time you open your mouth, even when  
2874 you are trying to pass, and are confident that you might pass just this once, if you keep your  
2875 mouth shut. But still, failure in the task of knowing what to do to look normal and appear to  
2876 fit in is absolute. You are from another planet, and you don't know how to be alongside  
2877 everyone else in an everyday way round here. It's no big deal, this pain you are feeling so  
2878 acutely. What is it, the inner whispers and adult teachings suggest, to be marked out as

2879 weird and different, compared to the pain and suffering of those whose children are  
2880 starving or have been blown up by a landmine?

2881 Young people learn early that this kind of pain has no importance and no significance.  
2882 ‘Sticks and stones can break my bones, but words can never hurt me.’ Part of the current  
2883 generation of young people are stigmatised as the ‘snow flake generation’: the ones who  
2884 want safe space and trigger warnings and all kinds of respect for their choice of pronouns  
2885 and who, in the opinion of their bruised elders, need to toughen up and learn to take the  
2886 knocks. Despite this difficult context, not fitting in and being left out was one of the most  
2887 frequently mentioned features of the experience of loneliness in our research, often times  
2888 related to an online and social media experience.

2889

2890 ‘I came to Manchester as a student and I think being different here is easier than  
2891 being different in a small town. But I can see that it might not make that much  
2892 difference when you are 13 and having to face school.’ (Kate, aged 20, Manchester)

2893

2894 Some girls can be horrid to other girls by saying they are ugly or fat or something and  
2895 then the one who is left out gets lonely.’ (Luke, aged 12, Stoke)

2896

2897 **<2> Autism as loneliness**

2898

2899 ‘My cousin is autistic and is always different and picked on. He wears noise softeners  
2900 and the teacher picks on him and says he isn’t paying attention and makes him take



2901           them off even though he needs them because he is very sensitive to noise because  
2902           of autism. But the other kids have started to call him Dr Who and he wears a scarf  
2903           and it's all right...' (John, aged 12, Stoke)

2904

2905   The fear of difference in many secondary school cultures became a key topic of discussion in  
2906   our research group. The normative culture embodies institutionalised distortions of  
2907   difference in forms of oppression and rejects aspects of embodied subjectivity which may  
2908   feel precious, closest to an authentic sense of self and are often, as a result of  
2909   institutionalised oppression, the sites of the greatest vulnerability. As the second quote  
2910   highlights for example, autism may be a very significant difference that is lived as an  
2911   experience of loneliness. However, the responses to this difference are not created by  
2912   autism but by the normative culture of sociality that rejects and fears neurodiversity.

2913   According to the National Autistic Society (2018) autistic people are four times as likely as  
2914   the general public to be lonely. They say that:

2915

2916           More than 1 in 100 people in the UK are on the autism spectrum. Most autistic  
2917           people want more friends and connections but many find forming and maintaining  
2918           social relationships difficult and confusing. The difficulties autistic people can face  
2919           filtering out the sounds, smells, sights and information can leave them feeling  
2920           overwhelmed and anxious in busy public spaces. Combined with anxiety about the  
2921           public misunderstanding their distress, it can be hard to go out at all. Without  
2922           appropriate and accessible support and services, many autistic people fall into  
2923           isolation and this can lead to loneliness.

2924

2925 But as the statement above shows, the loneliness does not only derive from isolation or  
2926 from the condition of autism. It derives also from a punitive approach to difference,  
2927 exemplified by the teacher who was drawing a boundary of control in the classroom by  
2928 making the child remove their noise-softening headphones.

## 2929 <2> The well of loneliness

2930 Even when norms seem to have shifted to a greater inclusivity and acceptance of  
2931 'difference', the experience of being 'the only one' in a group or the 'only one' left out of a  
2932 group is clearly isolating and can be made more so when it is mobilised by others in the  
2933 interests of retaining power and control. The joke about 'the only gay in the village' still  
2934 hurts.

2935 The appearance of a shift towards greater inclusivity can in part be explained by the  
2936 mobilising of difference in marketing strategies by commercial companies, such as the use  
2937 of the rainbow symbol in shops during Pride celebrations. The research project showed  
2938 however that the appearance of an inclusive culture is belied by experience for some young  
2939 people. Significant examples of loneliness considered in this chapter are from young people  
2940 exploring non-normative gender and sexuality, growing up as lesbian, gay, queer, trans\*,  
2941 intersex, pansexual or exploring and claiming other emergent non-binary or non-  
2942 heterosexual namings of their lives and humanity. In what follows, for the sake of brevity,  
2943 we have chosen to use the terms queer, and where we are referring specifically to a gender  
2944 experience, trans\*.

2945 The mobilisation of 'difference' as a means of exerting power has been the subject of  
2946 feminist and critical race theory based enquiries from the period of Audre Lorde's writings

2947 onwards. Such bodies of enquiry shaped the queer theory to which we now turn. The  
2948 feeling of 'being different' and being alone because of it was strongly associated in our  
2949 research with the experience of growing up 'non-normative' or 'queer', in terms of both  
2950 sexuality and gender. This was mentioned in every location in which we undertook research,  
2951 but was explored especially in the Manchester group:

2952

2953 'I was in the sixth form and I was staying on for some reason into the third year sixth  
2954 exams and all my friendship group had moved on. I was the only one left but it didn't  
2955 feel as if there was much point making new friends as there would soon be another  
2956 move to make. So I settled for keeping my head down and being quiet because of  
2957 what had happened before. One girl was 'out' and very happy about it, and I shared  
2958 my own feelings with her, in the strictest confidence. A few days later a rumour  
2959 started circulating that I had 'come on' to her, and every-one stopped talking to me  
2960 and ignored me. There was so much spitefulness. It's better to be on your own.'

2961 (Ruth, aged 19, Manchester)

2962 The discussion by queer theorists of the politics of normativity can greatly assist  
2963 understanding of what is happening here, and of the ways in which power play can render  
2964 isolation one of the most severe of punishments. Kokofsky Sedgwick's (1991) classic work  
2965 *The Epistemology of the Closet* pointed to the very different view of the world that emerges  
2966 in the work of queer artists, who were recognised as artists and whose homosexuality was  
2967 an open secret, both known and not known to the establishment who praised their work.  
2968 The knowledge developed from this position illuminated many of the secrets of the  
2969 hegemonic culture, rather in the way servants had knowledge of the secrets of their

2970 masters' bedrooms, through their knowledge of stains and secretions on the bedding. In  
2971 the same way, 'being different' is marked, stigmatised and often experienced as a very  
2972 lonely place, but can also become a position of strength and superior knowledge. One of the  
2973 earliest novels to explore lesbian experience was, after all, called 'The Well of Loneliness.' In  
2974 this chapter, we are actively drawing on the insights into the nature of the normative and its  
2975 dirty secrets created through the work of 'queer theory'.

2976 After all, strange and disturbing as queer loneliness in many forms can be, it is largely  
2977 regarded by those in our research team and others to whom we spoke, as a better  
2978 alternative than attempting to 'pass' or being a normal heterosexual:

2979

2980 'When I left school I started to question my gender and sexuality. For example, I can  
2981 pass very well as a boy. I grew up in the care system but when I left school last year I  
2982 moved into a 'leaving care' supported accommodation place. It's really hard and I'm  
2983 not being looked after. Everything feels overwhelming and big after being in the care  
2984 system where everything is done for you. It is really hard to make the effort to stay  
2985 in touch with new people. I've got one relative, an uncle, but I can't talk to him as he  
2986 is really bigoted. I am frightened about being alone and I'm also frightened about the  
2987 area I'm living in. I feel like I'm living in a mainly Muslim area and I'm not Muslim. I'm  
2988 frightened of going to college as I don't think they will accept me. I am very, very  
2989 lonely.' (George, aged 17, Manchester)

2990

2991 Statistically, it is more than likely that people identifying as other than heterosexual are in a  
2992 minority and it is even possible that in some schools or neighbourhoods there is only one

2993 trans\*, gay, bi, pan or non-binary person. That person may be 'the only gay in the village',  
2994 and that is undoubtedly an isolated and lonely position to be in.

2995 The process of 'coming out' too is complex, whatever the external situation. Not being out  
2996 puts up an extra barrier to closeness, as it can seem as if all friendships are based on a  
2997 misapprehension of reality. It is paradoxical that the 'difference' associated with not being  
2998 straight may now seem to be the cause of not being able to connect with others, and that is  
2999 all more the painful as our sexuality is, for many people, almost completely bound up with  
3000 our experience of and our capacities for intimate connection. Hiding the part of ourselves  
3001 that most desires close connection is a very painful position to be in. It implies an inability to  
3002 be vulnerable with someone else and that, by definition, creates loneliness. Early  
3003 experiences of rejection and bullying, such as Ruth experienced and presented in the extract  
3004 above, can be sources of difficulty in taking the risk of being seen for who you really are.

3005 Similarly for George, there was no supportive network in which he could feel safe presenting  
3006 himself in his masculine gender (he had been assigned as a girl at birth) and there were  
3007 multiple other factors impacting on his sense of security, having recently left the care  
3008 system. His sense of being alone, and being the 'only one', of intense social isolation, had  
3009 nevertheless not prevented him from identifying as a trans\* man. This conveys a sense of  
3010 the significance of these aspects of identity for George and for many other young people, of  
3011 the courage with which they seek to live their lives, and of the intensity of loneliness felt  
3012 when this cannot be shared in close relationships of friendship or intimacy.

3013 Finally, one young person in a trans\* youth group used humour to tell a story of what it is  
3014 like to feel utterly different and alone:

3015

3016 'X is a skeleton called X. The skeleton identifies as non-binary. No one will live with  
3017 them. They are socially awkward and can't get a proper job because they are a  
3018 skeleton. They are making money on the internet. The only job they can find is at  
3019 Hallowe'en being scary. They want to do something else but they are very scared  
3020 because being different they are always treated differently' (X, Manchester).

3021

3022 A large majority of trans\* young people experience bullying in school, and many experience  
3023 difficulties in their family support systems. Despite the energy and commitment of trans\*  
3024 youth groups who consistently challenge the invisibility (at best) and intense transphobia  
3025 and hate speech (at worst) of the current international media, the level of attempted  
3026 suicide among trans\* young people is reported as high. The establishment of trans\* youth  
3027 groups is one very important and indeed life-saving response to this, as are supportive  
3028 youth groups who act as allies to trans\* young people.

3029 The story of the skeleton suggests however both another epistemology of the closet and  
3030 also of the skeletons in the cupboard of heteronormativity. This skeleton is of course the  
3031 ultimate misfit. The cure for misfitting, in a neoliberal perspective, is to support and  
3032 encourage moves towards particular kinds of intimacy based on that of the married  
3033 heterosexual couple: monogamy, friendships with other married couples, a lack of need for  
3034 extended care or support. The lonely queer is after all still likely to be seen as immature,  
3035 deviant and a negative force. It can even be suggested that these lonely and deviant queers  
3036 are contributing to a widespread epidemic of loneliness and failure to be happy, which  
3037 needs to be cured by conformity. But the knowledge which the skeleton in this narrative is

3038 holding on to is that of their own truth and authenticity. The skeleton is a skeleton and it  
3039 cannot, nor it seems does it wish, to be cured.

3040 In addition, it can powerfully be claimed that this story of the skeleton is simply and  
3041 straightforwardly an everyday experience of loneliness, an everyday personal experience  
3042 that can become political, just as affirming being queer and trans\* becomes political. The  
3043 story of the skeleton allows us to consider that all skeletal humans may be prone to  
3044 loneliness. In owning and recognising this loneliness, we may be driven to consider the ways  
3045 in which an experience of empathy, sociality and relationality could change us, and enable  
3046 us to make our own 'families of choice' , elective affinities and kinship networks. It can also  
3047 lead to affirmation of solidarity with other social experiences of loneliness based on  
3048 exclusion and competition as drivers of a racist, sexist and able-ist capitalist system that  
3049 mobilise distortions of difference as division precisely to prevent solidarity. We could,  
3050 returning to Audre Lorde's terms, begin to see all our human differences as resources for  
3051 creative change.

3052 **<2> Feelings of failure and disappointment/not being able to share the loneliness**

3053 Normativity therefore can be seen operating not only in the isolation and loneliness of  
3054 queer experience, but also in the loneliness at the very heart of the system that uses and  
3055 distorts difference as a vehicle of oppression. For, it emerges, there is the sense that any-  
3056 one, even people who are apparently doing really well, can experience loneliness, and that  
3057 the negativity and isolation embodied in loneliness make it hard to share. Loneliness is  
3058 stigmatised, and so loneliness is lonely and silenced in a society in which the only way is up,  
3059 to happiness and success.

3060

3061 'Online, happiness is compulsory. Looking happy online with a drink in your hand.  
3062 You can't say: this is really hard and I'm missing you. And sometimes, even when I've  
3063 now done everything I was meant to do, and I've succeeded in school and pleased  
3064 my family and gone to Uni, and I still feel very unhappy and lonely....what now?'  
3065 (Patience, aged 20, Manchester)

3066

3067 'The stereotypical view is that loneliness is your fault; you've done something wrong,  
3068 something terrible's happened in your life and now you're alone. You're old and your  
3069 family don't like you so you're lonely. You're young and you haven't done something  
3070 and so now you're lonely. Loneliness is a normal feeling. People need to know it's OK  
3071 to be lonely. It exists. There needs to be acceptance of it. It's the label of loneliness  
3072 that's the problem. If it's just 'I was doing that by myself' then it's okay. But if you  
3073 call it loneliness or say they are lonely and it's like 'whoohah'. Something kicks in...  
3074 and they think it's so simple, if you're lonely go make some mates...so why are you  
3075 lonely?' (Rosa, aged 23, Manchester)

3076

3077 The other side of this experience of compulsory happiness is the denial of unhappiness, and  
3078 this could be at the root of the cold shouldering we discussed earlier in this chapter. This can  
3079 be called a Fear of Missing Out, but in a more active form it is practiced as cold shouldering  
3080 and an intense lack of empathy.

3081



3082 'Is there are word for 'hanging out with a lot of people you don't really like, just  
3083 because if you don't you won't have anyone else to be with?' (Mark, aged 19,  
3084 Manchester)

3085

3086 'No one needs to be alone in our school; no one needs to be lonely. They should just  
3087 pull themselves together, make an effort, come and sit with people and join in.'  
3088 (Victoria, aged 15, Manchester)

3089

3090 'I thought they liked me but the next time I saw them they turned their backs and  
3091 wouldn't speak to me.' (Jane, aged 23, Manchester)

3092

3093 The vicious and silent punishment which is cold shouldering could be thought to have one of  
3094 its sources in the violence which institutionalised fear and rejection of difference and which  
3095 then moves through groups and systems and targets individual lives in experientially and  
3096 actually random ways.

3097 The impossibility of knowing why one has been chosen for this treatment can resolve itself  
3098 in practices of self-blame...it must have been the way I look; the way I spoke; the fact that I  
3099 exist in the world at all. It is this that seems to provoke the vicious punishment and erasure  
3100 that such cold-shouldering is experienced as. It is as if this is the practice of exclusion pure  
3101 and simple, and the use of isolation as punishment and power. It is the reason why all  
3102 parents should be encouraged to think twice before using 'go to your room' as a  
3103 punishment.

3104 One of the young research team summarised the importance of the theme of loneliness as  
3105 follows:

3106

3107 'Tell them that Youth Loneliness exists.

3108 Tell them that we need to be able to talk about it without being ashamed of it.

3109 Tell them it's a real thing that really, really hurts. It's painful.

3110 But it might not be the worst thing and that it does not need to go on for ever. It can  
3111 come to an end.'

3112

3113 Another emphasised the issues of difference and connection:

3114

3115 'Loneliness means something different to everyone because everyone  
3116 experiences things differently. But I don't think people should be afraid of  
3117 loneliness. All your emotions are important... if you're lonely it means it you're  
3118 missing out on something, you need that social connection.'

3119

3120 The distortion of difference as a vector for violence and oppression and consequent  
3121 loneliness is one of the most troubling findings of this study. Using difference as a resource  
3122 for creativity and connection is one of the most significant positive findings of this study. It is  
3123 a major source for the practices of friendship that are explored in the third section of this  
3124 book.

## <1> Chapter 10: Online Spaces and Connection

It is seemingly paradoxical that the most connected generation in human history, young people *now*, are lonely. We were once promised the Internet would be populated by interfacing ‘netizens’ and ‘digital natives’ experiencing greater personal and global connection, increasing cultural understanding that in turn augured an era of peace and co-operation (Hauben 1995; Prensky 2001). In 2006, ‘You’ was voted the Time Person of the Year in recognition of the unnamed masses that contributed, commented and posted online (Time 2006). Books with titles such as ‘Wikinomics’ (Tapscott & Williams 2006) and ‘Here Comes Everybody’ (Shirky 2008) described how Internet technologies were redefining business, society and our lives through mass collaboration online. Yet within decades we face the apparent negative consequences for young people’s social and emotional lives.

A prominent theme in the loneliness media discourse is that social media *makes* you lonely (Redhead 2019; Obordo 2018), diminishes mental health and, with sustained use, *causes* conditions such as depression (Campbell 2019; Wakefield 2018). There are studies that identify links between young people’s use of social media and declining wellbeing, mental ill health and loneliness (Kross et al. 2013; Appel, Gerlach & Crusius 2016; Woods & Scott 2016; Booker, Kelly & Sacker 2018). There is, however, research that details the various positive affordances of social media and online communities for young people identifying as LGBTQI+ (Hanckel et al. 2019). Writers present persuasive cases that social media technologies are relentlessly designed, developed and refined to be addictive in order to maximise our attention and so capture more of our valuable data (Seymour 2019). Neuroscience research, however, remains contested over whether social media is addictive or is significantly ‘re-wiring’ young people’s brains as is sometimes feared (Kardefelt-Winther et al. 2017).

In this chapter we question the simplistic and deterministic relationships between youth loneliness or young people’s experience of growing up with social media and the Internet. Indeed, we should locate our contemporary debate in the historical series of moral panics about new technologies. As with the Internet and social media, the birth of the landline telephone was seen as both a threat to friendship by displacing face-to-face communication and an opportunity to connect lonely people, especially in rural places (Thomson 2016).

3155 A youth studies perspective frames this research and so our starting point is defined by  
3156 what is new, novel and transformative about social media and online connection, and how  
3157 young people are making sense of and creatively engaging with it. There were many  
3158 occasions throughout the research where familiar or recognisable youth experiences were  
3159 now transformed and somewhat disfigured through the intensification of social media.

3160 In one workshop we used scenario-based methods to explore how young women use social  
3161 media. The discussion tapped into established cultural practices of young women enjoying  
3162 getting dressed-up together to go out or as some sort of ritual performance. Yet the youth  
3163 co-researchers developed a scenario from their composite experiences of a young woman  
3164 alone in her bedroom, taking and posting photos on Instagram of her putting on make-up  
3165 and seductive clothes, with an excited expression on her face. In the final scene, however,  
3166 she is sat at home on the sofa still wearing make-up but in a comfy tracksuit. All dressed up  
3167 and nowhere to go but a number of photographs posted online promoting for her and her  
3168 followers a more preferable present.

3169 Another unusual but recognisable experience was hearing of young boys describe playing  
3170 online collaborative games such as Fortnite or watching YouTube clips of tother players  
3171 playing Fortnite. This is in principle not so different or a combination of previous youth  
3172 activities where young people would go on missions to do or find something, play ‘run off’  
3173 or hide-and-seek, play computer games, or watch team sports on television.

3174 The continuities in the concerns between historic and contemporary debates about landline  
3175 telephones and social activities (e.g. dressing up) in a digital context ought not to lull us into  
3176 complacency, however. Although we might be able to find analogues of these contemporary  
3177 Internet-mediated youth activities it is important to recognise that these are significantly  
3178 different. Players on Fortnite might talk to their friends while playing the game but it is a  
3179 highly compelling action game in which players battle the clock and each other to brutally  
3180 murder other player’s avatar. Whether we are concerned about this depends whether our  
3181 concern is with young players talking to one another through an online game and so may  
3182 reduce loneliness or whether we have a broader focus on childhood obesity and well-being.

3183 Frank Pasquale (2015) provides an instructive analysis. Corn is a healthy food yet its  
3184 intensification into corn syrup is a significant contributing factor to obesity. Chewing coca  
3185 leaves helps people live and work at high-altitudes in the Andes yet its intensification into

cocaine and crack cocaine makes it highly addictive. Similarly, people are in the main curious about one another, have drives to connect and understand themselves and one another collectively. At root we are yearning for connection and to find meaning with other people, which is an important and optimistic point. Yet, again, it is the intensification of this curiosity and the ways in which the urge to connect is mediated through the social media technologies of platform capitalism that is problematic (Srnicek 2017). Social media promise to help us make and keep in contact with friends (e.g. Facebook), pursue an exciting and tailored romantic and sexual life from the comfort of our chair (e.g. Tinder), or stay informed and entertained (e.g. Twitter). However, these technologies are developed to stimulate computable human interaction imposing the extraction of value as behavioural surplus on our collective territories of social connection and friendship (Zuboff 2018). Thus the spaces and technologies of young people's social connection, friendship and indeed attention have to various levels of completeness been captured for the extraction of value by some of the richest, smartest and most powerful corporations humanity has yet created or encountered.

## **<2> Contextualising social media**

An unexpected but arguably unsurprising realisation we made early on in the research was how normal the Internet and social media were to young people, especially in stark comparison to how unusual and epochal we – the adult researchers – perceived them to be. The age difference between the academic researchers and the youth co-researchers meant there were significant generational differences in our transitions from youth and adulthood. Marked amongst these were the times and extent we had transitioned from an analogue life through more complex formations towards being digital selves. Reflecting on the pervasiveness of social media and Internet technologies we older academics had a tendency to return to the idea that social media and Internet technologies were so ubiquitous that they must be interesting and powerful ways of explaining youth loneliness. This is not to say that the young people we worked with during the research thought the Internet was uninteresting, safe or benign but rather it was part of their broader experience of life, even if that life was often mediated by Internet-enabled devices.

The current generation of young people are growing up in a world in which an individual might have thousands, hundreds of thousands or millions of *followers* or *friends* online. In

3217 Peplau and Perlman's (1982) classic definition, loneliness is the difference between  
3218 perceived or desired social connection and the actual level of connection someone feels to  
3219 have. A question we might ask is whether the inflation in the quantity of *possible* connection  
3220 due to the abundance of Internet-mediated social relationships create new desires and  
3221 expectations of connection, friendship and popularity?

3222 The young people we spoke to had more complex understandings of online relationships  
3223 that went beyond simple quantities of connection but that also seemed to re-draw the  
3224 bounds of relationship statuses. we heard a number of times young people describe  
3225 friendship in quite a narrow sense, for example, 'Friends are people you know will *never* let  
3226 you down.' (Sonya, 21 years old) Such an attitude is different to what might be recognisable  
3227 to older generations where a friend could describe most people you knew and liked. What  
3228 seemed more important was not that someone has, for example, 20,000 followers on  
3229 *Instagram* but rather they had 20,000 followers because they have an active timeline of  
3230 images with them on holiday, on beaches, surrounded by friends and having an incredible  
3231 time.

3232 danah boyd (2014) writes that young people today are growing up online and in public.  
3233 Once not having a friend or being isolated might have been a private and personal matter.  
3234 No doubt this time of invisibility and silence may have been hard to endure. Yet, perhaps  
3235 there was some relief that being alone was not or did not feel like a public and visible  
3236 matter. Through social media young people now, however, are potentially constantly in  
3237 contact with other young people and their peer group. We can think of the opportunity to  
3238 post on Twitter or Instagram as an empty box casting a question over every event in our life,  
3239 minute-by-minute is this a Tweetable moment? Is this moment Instagramable? If not, why  
3240 not?

3241 The young people we spoke to recognized the pressure and risks of social media. Social  
3242 media presented a continued pressure to communicate oneself in a particular way, as  
3243 leading an interesting and enviable life. It was recognized that too much social media was  
3244 unhealthy or dangerous, or using social media in unhealthy ways could lead to a series of  
3245 pressures to be something else or to seek attention or validation from others,

3246         Social media is social pressure... people posting fake happiness. That has to be  
3247         one of the loneliest places, with so much inner unhappiness and faking it on

3248 line. So all your connections are based on falseness. (Rosa, Manchester, aged  
3249 21)

3250 The research team accompanied the youth co-researchers to a local theatre to watch the  
3251 compelling *I'm Standing Next to You* – a play about youth loneliness. The audience stood in  
3252 an open space as three actors moved amongst us depicting their character's life as a lonely  
3253 twenty-something as they sought and struggled to make connection and meaning in their  
3254 lives through social media. One scene featured a young male struggling with paranoia, and  
3255 sat at a desk doing a data entry job that he did not find meaningful. The final insult was  
3256 checking his phone to see an endless Instagram feed of more interesting lives being lived  
3257 elsewhere. Afterwards one of the co-researchers explained the resonance of this part of the  
3258 play to his life,

3259 I was him! It's crazy! Sitting at the desk. Clock not moving and you're desperate  
3260 to go. You check the clock. Not moved since you last looked. You check social  
3261 media. There it is. Pictures of people on a beach in Melbourne... And, damn,  
3262 you're just sitting there. (Gil, Manchester, aged 23)

3263 This feeling is described by the acronym, subject of research and focus of countless Internet  
3264 memes *FOMO* (the Fear of Missing Out).

3265 There are of course many reasons why a young person may be missing out: they may not  
3266 have been invited or they may not be able to afford to attend the social event,

3267 It's terrible if you see that everyone's having a party online and you can't afford  
3268 to go because you can't even afford to buy sausage rolls. You have to go to the  
3269 food bank but you aren't going to go to the foodbank because it's so undignified.  
3270 We've seen that a lot. (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

3271 It was strange – as young people are aware of the risks of social media and that they share  
3272 these risks together – that it was only in relation to social media that the young people we  
3273 spoke to about loneliness were anything other than sympathetic. During a scenario-based  
3274 workshop on using social media we talked about 'over sharers' – social media users who  
3275 post too frequently usually mundane details about their lives or perhaps over share very  
3276 personal information about themselves. We heard young people exclaim things like 'I hate  
3277 those people!' and when we co-created and explored vignettes of problematic social media

3278 activity, participants began to judge other young people, in some cases quite harshly. For  
3279 example, this is a young man talking about an imaginary young woman while developing a  
3280 social media user vignette:

3281           She's one of *those* girls, and sorry to anyone of you [he points at girls across table  
3282           and they immediately shake their heads denying the association] that have this...  
3283           she's got 'only god can judge me' on her profile pic [the room laughs] but then she's  
3284           posting posing in the toilets with her friends all the time. (Mo, 19 years old)

3285 Much has been written about the apparent pressure on users of social media to post  
3286 content online. Thinking of social media as an addiction is interesting because we can see  
3287 recognisable youth attitudes to their potentially addicted peers' behaviour. Thus we might  
3288 say there is a pressure to be sociable, gregarious, to drink, take drugs and have sex yet there  
3289 is a tendency for social conservatism in blaming other young people that become an  
3290 alcoholic, addicted to drugs or become pregnant. We see equivalent attitudes to social  
3291 media usage in that young people might feel a pressure to post online, and gain followers  
3292 and likes. However, 'thirst traps' describe *problematic* online engagements where a young  
3293 person posts, for example, increasingly revealing images of himself or herself wearing fewer  
3294 clothes because they receive likes or follows in proportion to how and how much they  
3295 reveal (Safronova 2017).

3296 Despite the apparent disdain for heavy and problematic social media use, we witnessed  
3297 changing and emerging attitudes and relationships of care. Some young people we spoke to  
3298 seemed to understand that the nature of social media channels means that they are active  
3299 and have agency in participating and influencing what other young people see and the  
3300 consequences for them,

3301           What does it mean to other people? It's like the likes. I'm addicted to likes! You get  
3302           that quick little buzz. Then you question it. Question the way I behaved. Question,  
3303           posting *it*. Like I was saying, I was destroying my body... [but] we live in a society that  
3304           idolizes celebs and all they do is post pictures of them doing drugs and drink and all  
3305           that. (Mark, aged 25, Manchester)

3306 We need to track and work to amplify these emerging practices of care that help young  
3307 people to individual and collectively to navigate the pressures of growing up online.



3308 One young man, Luke (21 years old) explained that he had deleted his social media accounts  
3309 when he felt isolated and depressed, 'It's just another window for someone to throw abuse  
3310 through... So I quit it all.' At the time, this was seen as an example of cyber-bullying but the  
3311 idea of the 'window' speaks to the transparent and open barrier between the interior and  
3312 exterior of young people's lives.

## 3313 <2> Online connection

3314 We were reminded of the importance of distinguishing between social media and the  
3315 Internet, and the positive uses of social media in contrast to the frequent negative portrayal  
3316 in the media. Internet-mediated connection is sometimes perceived as being a thinner or  
3317 more constrained form of social relationship, compared to some sort of authentic face-to-  
3318 face interaction. However, we spoke to young people for whom playing online computer  
3319 games with their friends was what they did in the winter because it was too cold to go out  
3320 and play football. For others, the Internet was a place where they could make significant  
3321 friendships that were not possible for them in their community,

3322 I have a friend I met online. I will never meet him, as this friend lives in Australia.

3323 But it's such an important friendship to me and it helps me avoid loneliness.

3324 (Arthur, 21 years old)

3325 For some young people in the LGBTQI+ community but living in socially conservative  
3326 communities where it is not okay to 'come out' or where they cannot find allies and friends,  
3327 the Internet can literally be a lifeline offering hope and a happier future,

3328 I have found on-line friendship and support as a trans\* young person exploring  
3329 my gender and also as someone with autism in a way that I would never have  
3330 found possible. I am not 'out' anywhere except here in this youth group and on-  
3331 line. It has saved my life. (Elsie, Manchester, aged 19)

3332 The majority of the young people we spoke to were positive about the possibilities and  
3333 potentials of the Internet, and it is important to remember that the Internet is not social  
3334 media or Facebook. We spoke to two girls who made friends using Google translate in a  
3335 school where the staff created a 'friendship hub' but all the students knew not to go their  
3336 for help,

3337           So she couldn't speak English and I couldn't speak Portuguese. But we use  
3338           Google Translate on our phones to talk to one another. (Faith, 16 years old)

3339   In our many encounters with young people, we found that young people were creative and  
3340   resourceful in their engagement with social media but that individually were bound the  
3341   collective participation of their friends and peers on social media.

## 3342   <2> Expanding collective youth capacities

3343   Working with and listening to young people about their creative uses of technology was  
3344   both inspirational and troubling. There is a tradition of research that explores the diverse  
3345   ways young people engage with the affordances of technology, where it becomes an  
3346   additional dimension to their digitally augmented selves (Mullan 2018). Nevertheless, young  
3347   people's voices are typically not made audible and heard in discussions about technological  
3348   developments (boyd 2014). Even if young people's engagement with technology – from  
3349   popularising texting, to inventions in dialect and syntax – they and their data are in effect  
3350   the targets of companies developing technologies to maximise the extraction of value.  
3351   Dwarfed by the scale and value of mainstream social media applications and social media  
3352   channels, we were drawn towards a tradition of research that seeks to co-design and co-  
3353   create social media and Internet technologies *with* and *for* young people (e.g. Collin & Swist  
3354   2016). As the research progressed towards its legacy stage we wanted to take one of the  
3355   recommendations and develop a practical and actual product, practice or new way to  
3356   cohere and expand young people's collective capacities.

3357   Throughout the research we had heard young people describe the various pressures  
3358   imposed by social media. The desire for *likes*, the imperative to be more popular and  
3359   interesting than was really the case, and to perform and evidence a potential alternative of  
3360   oneself was a significant set of concerns. The intensities of visible absences in one's timeline  
3361   and witnessing one's absence from a more enjoyable present in the form of FOMO or the  
3362   fear and pain of missing out were common experiences of the intensification of online social  
3363   connection. Moved by these insights, we wanted to include this issue of FOMO in the  
3364   research recommendations. So we called for those interested in the youth loneliness  
3365   agenda to,

3366           Recognise the additional pressures that social media can have on young people, but  
3367           also recognise the positive relationships and connections that social media can offer.  
3368   Our rationale was that social media has addictive properties but that we also the positive  
3369   potential to enable young people to create and maintain contact when feeling lonely or  
3370   isolated. It is not clear, however, what 'recognising the additional pressure' might look like  
3371   and who will be recognising this, when and how. We might imagine, for example, a parent,  
3372   practitioner in a school considering not enforcing a complete and permanent withdrawal  
3373   from social media or instituting blanket ban. Yet what about the quotidian experience of  
3374   young people experiencing this tension between the desire and benefits to connect through  
3375   social media and the fears or feelings of engaging with a technology with addictive  
3376   properties?

3377   People who score highly on a scale for addiction to Facebook, experience an expansion of  
3378   time when not using Facebook or social media, significantly over-estimating the time that  
3379   has passed (Turel, Brevers & Bechara 2018). This subjective expansion of time speaks to the  
3380   experience of time dragging and the continual checking of a phone for notifications, trying  
3381   to resist the temptation to check, and then checking the phone anyway. We are interested  
3382   in exploring the forms of support, repertoires of social practice we could develop with  
3383   young people, and how we share or amplify to build collective capacities and forms of care.

3384   There is already a range of resources for young people to draw upon to help them manage  
3385   their online lives, especially in addressing anxieties caused by FOMO. The campaign National  
3386   Day of Unplugging is an online community of people who unplug for one day a year and,  
3387   apparently without irony, post content online about their digital detoxes. There are  
3388   countless memes on, for example, Instagram with two boxes with 'my life on the Internet'  
3389   featuring a 'rock star' playing guitar in front of an adoring crowd next to another box with  
3390   'my life in reality' with a far less glamorous image. There are images shared by well-being  
3391   'influencers' with the poses and lighting which portray their bodies in more or less *attractive*  
3392   forms. Yet the young people we spoke to already know the representations of lives being  
3393   lived online are not *real*. The effect is far subtler, with the gradual pulls and hailing towards  
3394   different forms of themselves they desire to be. The FOMO memes, for example, present  
3395   yet more online content to scroll through and perhaps feel guilty about. I should not feel as

3396 though I am missing out. If I could create such content with me performatively not missing  
3397 out I might have more followers.

3398 As part of a legacy project to *Loneliness Connects Us*, we wanted to explore a collective and  
3399 creative response with young people to bridge youth co-research and youth social action.  
3400 We thought it was important that young people could come together to discuss the  
3401 pressures and pleasures of social media platforms. As we develop further in Chapter 12, we  
3402 were interested in the relationships and potentials between creativity, solidarity and  
3403 solitude.

3404 Creativity has become a catchall for positive change, and is persuasively critiqued as a form  
3405 of neoliberal appropriation (e.g. Mould 2018), but it is a value that we committed to, in part,  
3406 reflect and align with the creativity and inventiveness of youth culture. Throughout the  
3407 research and beyond we are struck by the creativity with which young people adapt  
3408 technologies, invent new dialects and syntaxes, and participate in sub-cultural activities  
3409 from feminism to the school climate strike. We wanted to explore a different approach to  
3410 existing ways of working with young people that produce and communicate  
3411 straightforwardly didactic messages such as, ‘don’t do drugs’ or ‘be optimistic about your  
3412 future.’ Socially engaged arts practices present the hopeful and potential, a form of  
3413 opportunity to enable us to collectively re-imagine our world. There is, however, a  
3414 recognised critique of the instrumentalisation of creativity and arts practices in social  
3415 exclusion programmes and youth work (Belfiore 2002). In this context, we ought to be  
3416 suspicious of instrumentalisation of artistic practices and standards of value, including the  
3417 instrumentalisation of ambivalence (Ladkin, McKay & Bojesen 2016).

3418 The work was inspired by the work of Benedict de Spinoza (1632-1677) a 17th Century  
3419 philosopher whose work spanned scriptural analysis, metaphysics and politics. Spinoza  
3420 engages with the immanent reality of the relational and interdependent nature of collective  
3421 life, for example, ‘to man, then, there is nothing more useful than man... all should strive  
3422 together, as far as they can, to preserve their being; and that all, together, should seek for  
3423 themselves the common advantage of all’ (Spinoza 1996, IVP18s). Joy is fundamental in  
3424 Spinoza to the processes of collective empowerment and emancipation (potentia), and by  
3425 joy, ‘the movement or passage towards a greater capacity for action’ (Nadler 2002: 235). Or  
3426 as Balibar (1998) identifies the significance of communication in Spinoza’s Ethics. Reason

and affect form two dynamics of sociability that produce social bonds and thus the foundations of the city and collective life. He explains that, 'passion and reason are both, in the final analysis, modes of communication between bodies and between ideas of bodies. In the same way, political regimes should be thought of as orders of communication...' (p.95) The challenge therefore is to transform these modes of communication in which the immanent power (potentia) of the political society becomes, 'the context of life that is properly 'human', a life that is lived with joy' (p.96). In this, Balibar (1998: 98) describes it, 'the search for a collective strategy of collective liberation, whose guiding motto would be as many as possible, thinking as much as possible (Ethics, VP5-10).' There are interpretations of Spinoza, however, that see that the cultivation of the imagination and affects as integral to collective projects to thrive in conditions of sociability. Gatens and Lloyd (1999: 33) identify the potential of collective processes of striving and civic friendship through which we might develop a, 'rationally schooled imagination [that] develops its own hopes which, although they can never be free of fear and sadness, offer a freedom and stability that can come to have greater force than the pitiable fluctuations of untransformed passion.' It is through these processes of imagination and collectively striving together that young people might forge this 'rationally schooled imagination' not so beholden to affects of hopes and fears, and the dubious pressures and pleasures of social media.

Nikki Wood, a Manchester-based visual and digital artist, joined the project to work with another group of youth co-researchers to explore alternative ways of thinking about what it means to be young with social media. The young people came from two projects. Kyso is a group of youth dancers and performers based in Moss Side, Manchester. We also worked with Manchester housing association, MSV Housing, to work with a group of young people who were part of an emerging youth assembly for Greater Manchester. As part of this process, we worked with a diverse group of 18 young people, aged between 14 and 22. We began working with this group in a spirit of creativity and speculation to imagine and develop new resources and repertoires of social practice to help young people who were feeling lonely.

An important dimension to the project was to think carefully about the ways in which young people were related to the conversations and emerging insights from the broader project. An important part of participatory and/or co-produced research is to work with young

3458 people as individuals or a group to reflect on and communicate their thoughts and feelings.  
3459 Yet it is an important step forward to develop ways in which young people can participate in  
3460 a growing debate of many young people exploring loneliness and belonging through  
3461 processes of research, rather than static and individual encounters based only on their  
3462 experiences.

3463 We developed the relationships between the young people and the project through a  
3464 planned series of activities, beginning with planned meetings between the research team  
3465 and the adults leading the projects. Then, we invited the prospective members of the group  
3466 to the project Youth Summit. The day began with performances from a youth theatre group,  
3467 developed through presentations on the research, explored loneliness in discussions which  
3468 culminated in the articulation of youth manifestos to reduce loneliness and develop more  
3469 convivial communities. The group participated in a performance of Missing to playfully  
3470 encounter loneliness through the life of a young woman that one would not expect to be  
3471 lonely yet felt so. Then we began hosting weekly sessions with the group and the artist Nikki  
3472 to explore loneliness through a series of activities to vocalise feelings of loneliness through  
3473 'call and response' discussions.

3474 The work is a digital animation that can be viewed through any web browser but should be  
3475 watched in a booth. The setting is that we feel as though we are listening in to a  
3476 conversation in a café as young people share their feelings. We see the faces of young  
3477 people as they talk somewhat hypnotically about their feelings of belonging and being  
3478 excluded, the situations they like and the ones they try to avoid. There are moments when  
3479 they talk about their anxieties of missing out and being alone,

3480       For me, there is a lot of isolation there's a lot of like, if I'm alone with my own  
3481       thoughts there is nothing I don't think about. I'm more of a negative thinker so I  
3482       always think about things that have gone wrong in my life and why it's gone  
3483       wrong and I try to find a way to blame myself for why it has gone wrong. So  
3484       when I'm with myself it always negative things that happen. (Sofia, 19 years old,  
3485       Manchester)

3486 The power of performance is hopefully in the warmth, connection and meaning expressed  
3487 in the conversations. We hear about plans to travel and learn language, and listen as they  
3488 remember with nostalgia their childhoods:

3489 M: I can imagine it right now, everything I used to think was cool I still do: old  
3490 movies, old cartoons, power rangers, oh my God.

3491 W: People are like into having chilli sauce with everything and that's just weird for  
3492 you all.

3493 M: Oh I can't remember what they were called, but you know those things, you  
3494 would smash it before it got bangs. They used to be like dog balls, the little pop  
3495 things. Cat bombs.

3496 W: Bratz! You used to love Bratz! I loved Bratz.

3497 Available online, intended to be found by a young person bored and online or looking for  
3498 something to help them understand FOMO, or be shared by a friend to someone they think  
3499 it could help. By the standards of online content that rewards brevity counted in seconds;  
3500 the performance is over 15 minutes and so something that is unlikely to 'go viral.' Instead  
3501 we hope the performance is something that challenges the temporalities of social media as  
3502 the immediate need for activity as posting, 'liking' or in notifications. Another orientation is  
3503 to encourage the viewer to think about those long lost moments, without evidence or  
3504 images to share and prove them, ephemeral yet still meaningful; or those hoped for events,  
3505 to travel and to learn languages, things that are not currently being missed. Whether young  
3506 people will find this resource useful is an open question. Perhaps the process in which  
3507 young people came together to explore loneliness together, through the immersive theatre  
3508 performance of Missing or in the various workshops, is where the project was most  
3509 powerful.

3510

3511

### **<1> Section 3: Building friendship and connection**

We now focus on a range of methods of finding friendship and connection, enabling the complexity of young people's experience to be foregrounded and explored. In this final section of the book there is a full discussion of the creative methods used in the *Loneliness Connects Us* collaborative research, which will give a sense of some of the ways this sensitive topic might be approached and become a theme of courageous conversation.

This section of the book draws strongly on the underpinning understandings of critical youth and community work as a practice of informal/non-formal education and accompaniment from which the research project started and as a practice of education in radical democracy. In particular, it starts from the assumption that there is a great deal to be learned by listening to and attending carefully to the practices which young people are already developing in response to loneliness, tuning in to them and supporting their development, strengthening and amplifying their shared agentic capacities. Youth work's classic emphasis on young people as 'creators not consumers' is to the fore in this part of the discussion.

We return in this section to methods of animation, attunement and amplification/advocacy which we worked with in this research project and explore them in more depth. The question of what it means to give and receive support is explored from the perspective of what 'befriending' might mean. Democratic youth work as a form of radical education and creative practice as a form of socio-cultural animation provide the field of praxis and theorisation for the following chapters. The range of theoretical stimuli we have used here are as eclectic as youth work and



3535 creative engagements themselves: inspired by a variety of writers and thinkers on  
3536 critical dialogue, on listening and on collaborative forms of enquiry and creativity. But  
3537 we seek to emphasise throughout this final section the forms of relationality through  
3538 which new understandings have emerged. We also wish to illuminate the possibility of  
3539 combining deep listening with an improvisatory creativity through which forms of  
3540 solidarity can emerge.

3541

3542

3543 **<1> Chapter 11: Asking for Help and Offering Connection**

3544

3545 'Aye, he's my pal...he's a weird kinda pal cos we fight all the time, but he's  
3546 always watching my back, he's there for me.' (Joe, aged 16, Glasgow)

3547

3548 Joe had spoken eloquently about how he had at times gone away to be alone and face  
3549 his own feelings that he'd be better off dead. It was immediately after he spoke about  
3550 that in our discussion session that that he turned to the friend sitting next to him and  
3551 spoke so appreciatively and honestly of him. To know you have some-one, a pal,  
3552 watching your back, can be life-saving.

3553 Young people are always creating new ways of finding mutual support as they struggle  
3554 to sustain connection. This chapter seeks to emphasise the importance of  
3555 acknowledging young people's activity and agency in this process of building support as  
3556 well as the agentic networks they are part of.

3557 The difficulties faced in the context of institutionalised and professionalised forms of  
3558 help are real and these are also explored here. We argue that attention to the  
3559 resourcefulness of young people and their existing, potential and imagined networks of  
3560 support could mitigate some of the difficulties faced in the context of professionalised  
3561 helping.

3562 This chapter also explores the complexity of asking for help and giving and receiving it  
3563 at a time in life when a growing independence is prized above everything. Young people  
3564 are often keen not to rely on help from parents or guardians. Parents and guardians

sometimes wish to begin to withdraw from the kind of parenting which young people seem to need. Others may wish to continue with patterns of parenting more appropriate to earlier periods of childhood. Complex family dynamics around support and independence may also be refigured in other settings where adults are seeking to offer help and support to young people. Beyond these intrapersonal dynamics are the environments which 'support agencies' occupy, their friendliness and openness or the high thresholds they offer for engagement, the complex pressures staff face in a period when projects are often underresourced to meet the demand they experience. It is often said in reflective moments among youth work professionals: 'There are no hard to reach young people, but there are many hard to reach support agencies.' The replacement of one-to-one physically present support with online support, referral to websites and other measures that reduce the availability of people when people are needed, is one of the symptoms of projects being managed under conditions of austerity imposed by public policy.

## **<2> Young people's mutual support**

In contrast with professionalised discussions of helping and support, young people's accounts emphasised every day acts, friendliness, conviviality and mutuality.

The small acts and everyday connections presented in this chapter are often ingenious and creative, subtly undermining expectations about status and control. One of the most significant features of peer to peer support is that it can be offered and accepted many times and in many directions, while circumventing and avoiding the influence of parent-child hierarchies.

3587 Asking for help and offering connection emerged as seemingly straightforward strategies for  
3588 young people experiencing loneliness or anyone looking to help them. Indeed we heard of  
3589 the power of everyday acts of kindness and friendship, of reaching out and connecting. It is  
3590 important, however, to remember that unfortunately engaging with loneliness is not so  
3591 simple. Loneliness is a state that young people might try to ignore, deny or hide. We also  
3592 have to locate requests or offers of help and connection as performed in relation to life  
3593 histories, gender, culture, personality, preference for connection, and mental health issues  
3594 as they intersect with experiences of loneliness: “You can’t keep running to mummy and  
3595 daddy. You have to cope with things by yourself” (John, aged 21, Norwich).

3596 It was unsettling to hear young people’s concerns about asking for help, and perceptions of  
3597 the limitations of help. Arguably related to a social imperative to be socially successful and  
3598 resilient, we heard young people resist asking for help from friends because: “It’s hard to  
3599 talk about [about loneliness] cos it puts pressure on others to be there for you” (Gil, aged  
3600 23, Manchester). This young man questioned the capacity of formal support structures, such  
3601 as counselling, to help. He explained his concerns: “You ask for help. You speak to someone  
3602 [a counsellor] ... but you go back home and it’s all there waiting. Still. It’s just you. I just need  
3603 to keep doing things and get out” (Mark, aged 25, Manchester). At the time of the research,  
3604 Mark was experiencing epileptic seizures that were provoking bouts of depression,  
3605 loneliness and isolation. He was undergoing counselling and participating in a range of social  
3606 action projects to provide himself with support and distraction from feeling alone and  
3607 depressed. The ambivalence between a need to keep busy and the possibilities opened up  
3608 by speaking about distress were powerful for him.

3609 **<2> Young people and mutual support: small acts of friendship and connection**

3610 Small acts of everyday kindness and friendship emerged as ways that people's lives might be  
3611 touched to make loneliness seem more manageable or provide support in an otherwise  
3612 painful time. These acts were often small and yet significant, sometimes coming from  
3613 another young person or adults that work with them:

3614 "When I was younger I was really ill, in hospital. One of my friends brought revision books  
3615 to the hospital and worked with me. I was pretty low. A youth worker based on the ward  
3616 introduced me to others with the same illness" (Paul, Youth Worker, Manchester).

3617 These acts of kindness were acts of friendship. One of our co-researchers explained that  
3618 friends were different to everyone else in that friends are there when you need them.  
3619 Although the actions in Paul's story may have been inspired by concern, the motivations did  
3620 not seem to be constrained or circumscribed by pity but equality, an openness enriched by  
3621 humour and warmth. These acts often played important functions in enabling young people  
3622 to feel as though they could join a new group of friends.

3623 These acts of friendship might be one young person reaching out to another:

3624 "I was at a gig by myself and this guy just came up and said you're here by yourself and I'm  
3625 here by myself. Why don't we hang out together and then we aren't by ourselves?"  
3626 (Clayton, aged 21, Manchester).

3627 They frequently involved jokes, for example:

3628

3629 'I was sitting there by myself. I didn't have anyone to talk to and I didn't know  
3630 what to do. Then my friend came up to me. She pretended she couldn't open this

3631 box of chocolates. She said, 'I don't know how to open this. Please can you help  
3632 me?' I laughed and said, I don't know how to do this. Please can you help me.'  
3633 We both fell about.' (Rosa, aged 18, Manchester)

3634

3635 At root, these acts of kindness reached out to someone and let them know that they were  
3636 not alone and that someone was reminding them that they belong.

3637 Humour is not unproblematic, however, in encouraging positive relationships. Banter, put-  
3638 downs, insults and aggressive humour are a perennial part of social relations. We noticed  
3639 the way however that, while they can be enjoyable and a part of social bonding, they can  
3640 also engender a fragile and fraught relationship that can make trust more difficult. One of  
3641 the friendships that emerged in the project was an usual one that nevertheless sustained  
3642 the work of the research project throughout its course. One of the friends was very  
3643 accustomed to using banter, often verging on abuse, as a way to connect and a way to fend  
3644 off connection, and this theme of the 'bants' was often discussed in the research team. This  
3645 odd friendship somehow subverted the impact of the banter through sustained presence  
3646 and quiet acceptance.

3647 Patience is one of eight leading youth artists that are 'taking over' the venue to make it  
3648 youth centred and create artistic visions of the future of youth. Her project is to create a  
3649 womb space out of parachute material: individuals crawl into the space and sit on beanbags  
3650 and chat to one another amongst ambient light and music, then when they are ready they  
3651 crawl through a small tunnel and are 'born' down a slide into a theatre space. The  
3652 production of this installation in a leading cultural centre was, in addition to the loneliness  
3653 co-research project, what Patience was doing on just one night of the week. Patience rarely

3654 spoke up during the group meetings, preferring instead to sit and listen, to demur or evade  
3655 when asked her opinion, and seemed to be peripheral to and bemused by the project. She  
3656 was most animated when talking about which food option we should choose, which pizza  
3657 shop we should use, or where we could go for a reward session. Yet her engagement was  
3658 more than a distractedness or disruption. She was frequently found supporting Mark, when  
3659 he repeatedly sought to disrupt the discussions through 'banter' and by making provocative  
3660 or offensive statements. She and her friend Mark enjoyed hanging out together in the  
3661 community partner's projects. They are an odd couple. Indeed, many remark that it is odd  
3662 they are friends. He is working class, feels continually marginalised and misunderstood and  
3663 is interested in rap music, whereas she is middle class, quiet and plays classical piano;  
3664 yet, they are fast friends. As he would question the right of trans\* parents to raise their  
3665 children as trans\*, she would look at the other members of the group with a conciliatory  
3666 expression: I know this is bad, she seemed to be emoting, but it's okay. He needs to be here.  
3667 Mark suffered from depression and discussed suicidal ideation. He explained how the group  
3668 enabled him to get out of his bedroom where his problems wait for him. Mark also  
3669 recognised that when he is not venting about these hot topics he is a lot of fun, seems much  
3670 calmer and nicer. But Patience too needed to be here, for reasons that remained unspoken  
3671 but were somehow connected with a member of her family. As did all involved in the  
3672 research in some ways, spoken and unspoken. Sustaining a presence in the research team  
3673 came to be, in itself, a counter against the loneliness we were conjuring.

3674 Friendship means being there for someone when they need you. It was striking the extent  
3675 to which young people looked to others of their own age, often family members, for  
3676 support: "Your older brother sticks up for you even though you lost the fight; Your cousin  
3677 comes and looks out for you; Your older sister asks and asks until you tell her you are gay"

3678 (Kate, aged 20, Manchester). Joe said: "Aye, he's my pal...he's a weird kinda pal cos we fight  
3679 all the time, but he's always watching my back, he's there for me" (Joe, Glasgow, aged 16).  
3680 In this sense, young people find friends with those who act with and for them, who are allies  
3681 in life's struggles. They also appreciate the people who take time to listen in an everyday  
3682 context. Part of the important discussion of listening and paying attention as a key part of  
3683 friendship emerged in the context of noticing how little school cultures support these  
3684 mutual forms of support. A friend at school might:

3685

3686 'Take the time to be with you and not interrupt. Notice that you are on your own  
3687 a lot and ask if you want company at lunch time or at a break time. Listening and  
3688 paying attention at school is often about listening and paying attention to the  
3689 teacher and not much support is given to people learning to listen to one  
3690 another.' (Kathy, aged 20, Manchester)

3691

3692 Friendship is also seen as involving being company for someone else. There were a number  
3693 of ways young people had of finding company and keeping company. These ranged from  
3694 simply phoning and texting to taking up smoking as a way of providing an automatic group  
3695 to belong to.

3696 Academic studies, like everyday life experiences, can often undervalue friendship even  
3697 though it is widely recognized as a very important relationship in the period of life when  
3698 young people may be letting go of the support of their parent(s) or carer(s) and seeking to  
3699 establish a new identity. Unlike family relationships, friends are chosen; good friends are  
3700 people who we can talk to and on whom we can rely. They are also people we can enjoy



3701 being with and doing things with. Some young people talked about deliberately taking up a  
3702 new sport or hobby to try and create new friendships, or of inviting someone else to join  
3703 them in doing a new and apparently ridiculous thing. One of the practices discussed  
3704 frequently in the research group was how to initiate and sustain contact that could then  
3705 become a friendship.

3706

3707 'Someone said something really random one year like...who wants to learn the  
3708 banjo. And somehow then there were all these banjos around and we made a banjo  
3709 group. Me and A have been friends ever since.' (T: Manchester)

3710

3711 In this way too, shared interests or enthusiasms could potentially take over from other kinds  
3712 of shared identity that might be the reason a group had come together.

3713 Another important mechanism of connection, especially for young people whose experience  
3714 of loneliness emerged from the social stigmatization and distortion of their difference, or  
3715 from social isolation, was a tendency to invest in fantasy games, cosculture, superheroes,  
3716 musical theatre, science fiction and in the sharing of talismanic objects taken from these  
3717 spaces. Where human connection was routinely failing, the strategy of connecting through  
3718 partial objects taken from assemblages of speculative fiction was a powerful strategy for  
3719 unsettling loneliness: "We are all into superheroes here and I love musical theatre. I know  
3720 the songs from every single Rogers and Hammerstein musical. Plus some of us go to  
3721 coscon." Another young person said: "Harry Potter characters are so important: we all know  
3722 them; we can all talk about them; they can be our guides and the stories tell us so much..."

3723 These superheroes offer a safe connecting point in the fragile and risky place of social  
3724 bonds. And their power could – if only in imagination - conquer all comers.

3725 **<2> Asking for help and the question of power**

3726 Requests for and offers of help and connection intersect with flows of power where  
3727 control can masquerade as care. Such masquerades carry the marks of patriarchal  
3728 control and class-based symbolic violence as well as being complexly marked by  
3729 individual personalities and life stories. Those who offer help are seen and experienced  
3730 as in the powerful position and those who are beneficiaries are seen and experienced as  
3731 relatively powerless. To ask for help in this context is to appear to place oneself in a  
3732 position of powerlessness and weakness. For many people, including many young  
3733 people, this is enough to prevent them reaching out for help and seeking connection.

3734 In many communities, for example, ‘strength’ is a positive attribute, associated with the  
3735 ability to endure suffering stoically. Being seen as ‘a strong working class woman’ for  
3736 example is a position of value and authority. Someone who is struggling to endure  
3737 stoically may feel that they are required to toughen up and get on with life, as this is  
3738 what coping involves. In such a context, asking for help is seen as weakness. Actually, in  
3739 such contexts and in a strange reversal, the consequence is that asking for help and  
3740 support is what requires courage.

3741 It requires courage as it involves a certain kind of vulnerability before or alongside  
3742 others. It is likely that, in asking for as well as in offering help, people have been  
3743 rebuffed. There is a consequent fear that the request for or offer of help will be refused,  
3744 and of the feelings of rejection that may accompany this refusal.

3745 Another dimension of the reluctance to ask for help is a certain fear in relation to

3746 dependency. It may be that there has been an experience of being depended on in a  
3747 way that has been profoundly unequal, and this inequality has become, even if  
3748 unconsciously at times, a source of resentment. Such an experience can in turn lead to  
3749 a fear of imposing such inequality and of being a burden on others and becoming  
3750 therefore an occasion of resentment: "It's hard to talk about [about loneliness] cos it  
3751 puts pressure on others to be there for you" (Gil, aged 23, Manchester).

3752 Furthermore, asking for help involves an implied loss of control, and if control has, for  
3753 example, been won with difficulty as part of a struggle for independence, it is hard to  
3754 risk its loss. A significant feature of young people's relationships with professionals who  
3755 might precisely be expected to offer help and support is that such relationships are  
3756 often conditional and caught up with a bargain of some kind. The bargain may be one in  
3757 which time is made available, but the young person needs to fit in with the schedules  
3758 imposed by the professional. Or resources such as food may be made available, but this  
3759 is accompanied by an expectation to take part in a 'healthy eating' course. Help with  
3760 childcare is made conditional on attendance at a parenting course. Such young person-  
3761 professional relationships also typically come with a warning that retaining  
3762 confidentiality may not be in the power of the professional if there is a disclosure of  
3763 potentially criminal harm to the young person, or to others, known as a 'safeguarding  
3764 issue'. This also applies in cases where there is a fear or suspicion of a young person's  
3765 involvement with 'radicalisation'. In this context, the professional is easily seen as  
3766 having a prior commitment, prior to the act of listening, and within communities where  
3767 there is a power dynamic of mistrust towards the authorities, such a prior commitment,  
3768 whilst it is intended to be part of a process and a dynamic of care, is readily experienced  
3769 as one of control. Such professionals whose first loyalty seems to be to the authorities

3770 are unlikely to be trusted.

3771 Sometimes schools' formal systems are so distrusted that friendship involves navigating  
3772 what seem to be offers of support and turn out to be dangerous in the name of what  
3773 seem more real possibilities of support:

3774

3775 'My school has a support hub where pupils can go if they are feeling lonely. But  
3776 you can't go there. It's the last place you can go. No one would use that hub if  
3777 they were lonely. So this girl started school and she was new and only spoke  
3778 Portuguese. At that time I didn't have many friends anyway as I used to act up  
3779 and behave really badly and I didn't understand why but it meant that people  
3780 were wary of me. Anyway, my advice is maybe look for someone else who seems  
3781 to be on their own. I got friendly with this girl who only spoke Portuguese. So she  
3782 couldn't speak English and I couldn't speak Portuguese. But we use Google  
3783 Translate on our phones to talk to one another.' (Faith, aged 16, Manchester)

3784

3785 Help can take various forms: practical help with specific problems; listening and  
3786 exploring in ways that support people to find their own ways forward; and also actual  
3787 guidance and advice because the person who is turned to is believed to have the  
3788 wisdom to undertake this role. In one of the most influential texts on help, David  
3789 Brandon's *Zen and the Art of Helping*, Brandon suggests that 'The real kernel of all our  
3790 help, that which renders it effective, is compassion' (1990: 60). He continues:

3791

3792 Compassion is being in tune with oneself, the other person(s) and the whole world. It  
3793 is goodness at its most intuitive and unreflecting. It is a harmony which opens itself  
3794 and permits the flowing out of love toward others without any reward. It avoids  
3795 using people as tools. It sees them as complete and without a need to be changed.  
3796 (Brandon 1990: 60)

3797

3798 Such thinking about what asking for help might mean in the context of loneliness suggests a  
3799 most powerful connection between the one who seeks help and the one who offers it. This  
3800 can be very difficult for people who have been educated to see their professionalism in  
3801 terms of appropriate distance and impartial involvement. Brandon (as so many since him  
3802 have been, especially those involved in the survivor movement) is precise about the ways in  
3803 which being 'helped' can hinder the development and flourishing of those helped. One  
3804 common way this happens is when bureaucratic and institutionalized methods become an  
3805 obstacle to listening and come to define the situations and experiences of people who might  
3806 be considering asking for help. This is what happens when one project's 'signposting' is a  
3807 young person's 'being passed from pillar to post'. In order to access resources, people often  
3808 have to either define themselves, or be defined as, in deficit or needy. In such  
3809 circumstances, according to Brandon: 'Helping is a thin veneer on top of a robust hindering.'  
3810 To protect against the development of such forms of obstruction masquerading as help,  
3811 David Ellerman (2006) has argued for five principles:

3812

- 3813 • Help must start from the present situation of the doers.
- 3814 • Helpers must see the situation through the eyes of the doers.

- 3815       • Help cannot be imposed on the doers, as that directly violates their autonomy.
- 3816       • Nor can doers receive help as a benevolent gift, as that creates dependency.
- 3817       • Doers must be in the driver's seat.

3818

3819   Ellerman uses the term 'doers' here to emphasise the agency of those seeking support.

3820   There is also a growing understanding of the significance of the ways in which an  
3821   acknowledgement of vulnerability is critical in many support processes. The emotional  
3822   armour that people use on a daily basis is there to help us avoid feeling shame, anxiety,  
3823   uncertainty, and fear. Alongside these feelings however, compassion can also be  
3824   crowded out by strategies of toughening or numbing up against the feelings that other  
3825   people's pain touches, or of avoidance, or of a dampening down of joyful moments in  
3826   order to prevent the difficulties of disappointment.

3827   Although some young people might want to be alone or experience a form of social  
3828   anhedonia – the inability to find pleasure in usually enjoyable activities – we heard of  
3829   various accounts where small acts of kindness, care and generosity helped a young person  
3830   find connection and reduced loneliness. A trans\* young person describes how a youth  
3831   worker helped them realize that they belonged:

3832       'I wish someone would have told me that being \*insert LGBT+ identity\* is real and  
3833       valid. I wish someone would have told me sooner that I deserve to be happy and  
3834       shouldn't always put other people's needs before my own. Thank you for just talking  
3835       to me and treating me like any other person and not just seeing me as 'the trans\*  
3836       one' in school (i.e., you didn't treat me like I was an inconvenience, or feel sorry for  
3837       me, or not know how to act when I was around etc, which is how every other

3838 teacher treated me). You made me feel welcome and comfortable (and "normal") at  
3839 a time when I felt like no one understood, and you'll probably never know how much  
3840 that helped me. Thank you for believing me and supporting me when I came to you  
3841 for help. I felt like no one else would listen or take me seriously but you did  
3842 everything you could to help me figure out what to do. Thank you for supporting and  
3843 accepting me when I came out as trans\*. You didn't make a big deal out of it, but  
3844 made sure I knew that I had your support.' (Anonymous, Manchester)

3845 The capacity both to treat someone as normal/not at all weird and at the same time to  
3846 accept their difference is at the heart of the kind of responsive and radical listening which  
3847 seems to be the best kind of response to a request for help.

3848 Pauline Oliveros (2005), the experimental musician, developed an improvisatory practice of  
3849 Deep Listening, which drew on both attention and awareness, focal listening and global  
3850 listening, to create her experimental music. She said that this method was grounded in both  
3851 Buddhism and feminist theories of the social. We can imagine that the kind of Deep  
3852 Listening practiced by the teacher in this story was able to embrace both the absolute  
3853 singularity of the experiences that the young person shared and the planetary context in  
3854 which gender categories are being opened up once more. It was in each of these dimensions  
3855 that the storyteller was needing to be heard and was asking for support.

3856 The fundamental practices of support which this chapter has addressed are a key aspect of  
3857 effective practice in youth and community work, and the nature of friendship both as  
3858 mutual support and as an element of professional practice has been shown to be a theme  
3859 worthy of much more investigation by our engagement with young people's own peer  
3860 support strategies which became evident as a result of the research focus on loneliness.

## **<1> Chapter 12: Youth Work as a Method**

Community-based Youth work was a critical starting point for the whole co-research project and in this chapter we present in more depth the nature of the research partnership with key research partners and the ways this informed the whole research collaboration.

### **<2> Youth work as engagement**

The most important partner in this research was 42<sup>nd</sup> Street, a project that describes itself as supporting young people aged 11-25 years with their emotional wellbeing and mental health. They describe their offer thus:

We offer a range of individual therapeutic support and encourage and support young people to have a voice, and access opportunities to learn, develop new skills, be creative, have fun and demonstrate to themselves and others that they are able to recover, manage their mental health and wellbeing and achieve their full potential.

In this self-description it is still possible to hear the resonance with the experience of the detached youth workers whose work in Manchester City Centre led to the formation of 42nd Street forty years ago. There is a strong person-centred and relational approach to practice in the organisation, and the roots of the project in youth work are still evident in the range of groups and activities that run alongside individual therapeutic, counselling and other one-to-one support sessions. There is also an emphasis on young people's voices and claims to rights shaping current and future projects. This work is carried out in a context where enjoyment and enthusiasm are constantly present. Doing things together and having fun is recognised as an important



3884 foundation from which to develop groups in which young people can offer mutual  
3885 support, build up trust and a sense of safety in order to take risks for change and have  
3886 access to real opportunities for personal development.

3887 The 18 month-long *Loneliness Connects Us* project was offered as one of 42nd Street's  
3888 groups, and was staffed by a youth worker, Kurtis Angel. Kurtis was himself a young  
3889 person within the terms we had set for the project (aged between 15 and 25) and had  
3890 previously taken part in earlier 42<sup>nd</sup> Street research projects concerned with young  
3891 Black men's experience of mental health. Alongside Kurtis, James Duggan and Janet  
3892 Batsleer also acted as group work anchors and facilitators throughout the year, making  
3893 an ongoing commitment to be present, to build a strong relationship and a holding  
3894 environment in which challenging issues could be explored, difficult questions asked  
3895 and creative steps taken to name and address the theme of loneliness among young  
3896 people.

3897 The research group took a different shape at different stages of the year and interacted  
3898 with other groups and opportunities throughout the project. It was at its biggest at the  
3899 beginning and end; just four or five young people were present loyally throughout and  
3900 for them the *Loneliness Connects Us* project clearly fulfilled one of the key purposes of  
3901 community-based youth work: the provision of a place to be, of shared activity and  
3902 some-one to talk to. Many of the activities we undertook together would have  
3903 recognisably formed part of a programme in a well-resourced Youth Centre. There were  
3904 opportunities to take part in discussions; in creative making; in games design.  
3905 Participants acted as co-researchers in sometimes small and sometimes extended ways,  
3906 at the design, implementation and analysis stages of the research. There were times for

3907 shared food and drink; for shared music and playlists; theatre visits and shared film lists,  
3908 and a final creative project, the immersive theatre performance of 'Missing', which also  
3909 included a tour.

3910 As Sinead Gormally and Annette Coburn (2016) have pointed out, it is not hard to find a  
3911 nexus between the approach to research taken in this project and youth work processes  
3912 of engagement. Finding common ground, establishing a fruitful process of critical  
3913 enquiry, shaping events as creators not consumers, seeking to explore what might  
3914 constitute flourishing and wellbeing as a basis for ethical practice and for enabling  
3915 young people's mutual support and development: all these are familiar youth work  
3916 themes.

3917 The In Defence of Youth Work campaign proposed the following foundations for a  
3918 critical and democratic youth work practice and these youth work 'cornerstones' have  
3919 been widely discussed and adopted as a starting point for critical conversations about  
3920 youth work as informal education and support, both in the UK and internationally (In  
3921 Defence of Youth Work 2019). They were adopted by this research project as a starting  
3922 point, and the synergy between them and the methods that we adopted as researchers  
3923 was strong. These cornerstones refer to:

3924

- 3925 • The primacy of the voluntary relationship, from which the young person can  
3926 withdraw without compulsion or sanction;
- 3927 • A commitment to a critical dialogue, to the creation of informal educational  
3928 opportunities starting from young people's agendas;

- 3929       • The need to work with and encourage the growth of young people's own  
3930           autonomous networks, recognising the significance of class, gender, race, sexuality,  
3931           disability and faith in shaping their choices and opportunities;
- 3932       • The importance of valuing and attending to their here-and-now as well as to young  
3933           people's 'transitions';
- 3934       • The nurturing of a self-conscious democratic practice, tipping balances of power in  
3935           young people's favour;
- 3936       • The significance of the worker themselves, their room for autonomy, their ability to  
3937           fashion an improvised, yet rehearsed practice.

3938   In the research process, involvement was without sanction and also without payment,  
3939   other than for the convenor of the group, although some incentives were offered to  
3940   participants in the form of food and wider opportunities to be part of arts and cultural  
3941   activities. The whole way in which loneliness was explored began from a conversation  
3942   within the research group as it was constituted from the beginning (as was discussed in  
3943   Chapter 3). The social formation of loneliness was on the agenda from the start, as it  
3944   was common practice in 42nd Street, rooted as it is in traditions of empowerment, to  
3945   enquire into the experience of social exclusion and discrimination as a major  
3946   contributing factor to issues with emotional well-being and mental health.

3947   The valuing of the here and now and the development of a democratic practice became  
3948   particularly evident in the contribution of young people who stayed the course. Here,  
3949   the youth workers and the researchers were able to support them to develop their own  
3950   interests and lines of questioning, in one case giving support to an ongoing interest in  
3951   making radio programmes and in another helping the individual to link up with

3952 academic experts in the fields of psychology and nutrition. But even when a co-  
3953 researcher attended only one or two sessions, their contribution to that session was  
3954 valued on a basis of equality.

3955 The young people came to the research project with a variety of connections to 42<sup>nd</sup>  
3956 Street as a young people's project and to loneliness as a theme. As we developed more  
3957 and more ways of linking together, the group became more at ease at sharing  
3958 experiences. This process of sharing lent itself to a constant reiteration of themes that  
3959 could then be explored in more depth with other young people, through a kind of 'each  
3960 one, teach one' process. This continuous development and exploration of key themes is  
3961 a recognisable method in critical youth work practice, deriving from an engagement  
3962 with Freirean pedagogies in which 'generative themes' form the basis of a period of  
3963 work which is co-created by a group and facilitated by youth workers.

3964 Some students undertaking education and youth and community work courses at  
3965 Manchester Metropolitan University also joined the research process at different  
3966 stages. For some, this allowed them to explore informal education as a practice in  
3967 relation to their experience of schooling. Others who were already experienced as  
3968 youth workers joined the research team as co-researchers. In doing so, historic patterns  
3969 of linking radical research with youth work practice were being revived (Back 2007;  
3970 Batsleer 2008).

## 3971 <2> Youth work as method: the 'cornerstones' in action

3972 The performance of 'Missing', which is discussed in depth in the next chapter, was toured  
3973 around the following youth projects across the UK, engaging staff and young people. Each of  
3974 these projects exemplified a unique aspect of youth work practice as it has developed in the

3975 UK and it is hard to summarise this briefly. The following snapshots of the locations and  
3976 projects that we worked in will however give an indication.

3977 **In Norwich and Great Yarmouth** we were in partnership with MAP. MAP is a Young People's  
3978 Advice Project engaged with young people across the county of Norfolk. As discussed in  
3979 Chapter 4, Great Yarmouth was used as a pilot area for the implementation of a new UK  
3980 welfare system called Universal Credit. This was having a terrible impact on already  
3981 struggling families and individuals, who were being left without income for six weeks once  
3982 they were signed on to the new system as their existing benefit entitlement stopped and  
3983 the new system involved payment in arrears. Staff also conveyed to us the sense of how  
3984 rural isolation and the contrast between the 'haves' and 'have-nots' creates a sense of not  
3985 being cared for or cared about, accompanied by a sense of shame about coming from or  
3986 having anything to do with the town.

3987 Both young people and staff here gave us a vivid sense of the creativity and resourcefulness  
3988 that young people can find among themselves to challenge the effects of isolation, and of  
3989 how poverty and insecure employment impact on the lives of a whole community. The  
3990 youth work being developed here was focused on detached work and a café project which  
3991 would provide a place to go and a point of contact for young people. The detached youth  
3992 workers who were developing this project were local, and had an enormous fund of  
3993 empathy for the experience of boredom and isolation that many young people faced in a  
3994 town where there 'was just one road in and one road out'.

3995 There are two aspects of youth work as method that this project highlighted strongly for the  
3996 research team. The first was the importance of advocacy in youth work that combats  
3997 loneliness. MAP, as the names suggests, seeks to enable and support young people to find a

3998 path by taking early action to address difficulties as they arise. The project had a strong  
3999 commitment to young people's rights, and was part of the Make Our Rights a Reality  
4000 network of projects nationally, which emphasises voice and action concerning those rights.  
4001 As well as supporting young people to represent themselves and address their own  
4002 difficulties, the project practices advocacy and, during the time of our research, was strongly  
4003 addressing the impact that the pilot of Universal Credit was having on families and therefore  
4004 on young people.

4005 The second important aspect of youth work as method was the practice of street-based  
4006 ('detached') youth work. Sometimes seen as youth work in its purest form, it involves  
4007 meeting with young people in the spaces they choose, on young people's own terms, and to  
4008 work with and from the agendas young people bring to the conversation. During *Loneliness*  
4009 *Connects Us*, we met detached youth workers who were building an evening café project in  
4010 Great Yarmouth at times that were accessible to the young people currently at a loose end  
4011 on the streets, after the summer season at the seaside resort had ended.

4012 **In Ballymena**, we were in partnership with N-Gage and the Youth Hub at Start360. Start360  
4013 is a Northern Ireland-wide charity dedicated to young people's health and wellbeing. The  
4014 Youth Hub is at the very heart of the main streets in Ballymena. Gerry McVeigh is a  
4015 professionally qualified and highly experienced youth worker whose work with the umbrella  
4016 body, Start360, supported the development of N-Gage. Gerry told us about how the project  
4017 emerged and was supported through public health initiatives in Northern Ireland. It is an  
4018 open access and drop-in project that also receives referrals, but all young people who  
4019 attend do so on a basis of choice. N-Gage seeks to and clearly does build close relationships  
4020 with participants who come from all parts of the town. The project responds to the 'hidden

4021 harm' that can impact on children and young people. The staff noted the presence in the  
4022 town of problematic or shameful drug use (since Ballymena is a town in which heroin took a  
4023 hold towards the end of the period of the Troubles). As discussed in Chapter 5, N-Gage are  
4024 also alone in the town in having a public commitment to affirm same sex love (shown by the  
4025 poster in their window supporting equal marriage), and they host an LGBTIQ\* youth group.  
4026 Staff talked about sectarianism and its aftermath and consequences, although the young  
4027 people did not, and about the loneliness faced by young people living in very isolated rural  
4028 farms who do not have access to transport to come into the town and meet friends. This  
4029 project worked strongly through a relationship building approach and through the creation  
4030 of spaces and opportunities for young people to connect and to develop ways of supporting  
4031 one another.

4032 In relation to the discussion of youth work as method, key aspects that emerged in the  
4033 context of the Ballymena project were the creation of safe peer group spaces in which  
4034 support emerges through participation in enjoyable activities designed with rather than for  
4035 young people, but in which horizons are also extended. The N-Gage centre itself was  
4036 testimony to this as the group of young people who were core participants in the project at  
4037 the time of our research were designing a holistic healing space: a quiet space at the heart  
4038 of the project that would be used for meditation but also for a range of alternative  
4039 therapies.

4040 This mobilization of youth work as informal learning and support through association was  
4041 also clear and present in the way the project used residential experiences. A strong tradition  
4042 of using residentials began in the outdoor and adventure education strands of youth work  
4043 but has now developed far beyond this. During our visit to N-Gage, two forthcoming

4044 residentials were being discussed: one focused on creative writing, and the other for young  
4045 women. Workers recognized that these opportunities led to an intensification and an  
4046 extension of the processes of mutual learning and support already occurring for the groups  
4047 and individuals meeting in N-Gage.

4048 **In Glasgow**, we were in partnership with Fairbridge and The Prince's Trust. The projects in  
4049 Glasgow were slightly different from the other projects we had worked with in the sense  
4050 that they are part of a national organization, based in the very heart of Glasgow and offering  
4051 opportunities to re-engage through a structured youth work programme that follows the  
4052 same model nationally. Young people come to the Fairbridge Programme in Glasgow from  
4053 throughout the western area of the Central Belt in Scotland. Some of the key aspects of the  
4054 programme, which begins with an outdoor and adventure education access programme, is  
4055 that it is based on choice and confidence building. It uses a range of activities such as  
4056 cooking, creative arts, employment taster sessions and self-care sessions, to support young  
4057 people aged 16-25 in developing self-confidence before taking up a more specifically  
4058 employment-focused Prince's Trust programme. Staff conveyed a sense of Glasgow as a  
4059 dangerous city to be young in at the moment, with an increase in knife crime creating a  
4060 climate of fear and isolation.

4061 During the period in which we met the Glasgow team at Fairbridge, they articulated for us  
4062 some key issues that they address through youth work as a method. The most significant  
4063 was the attention that is given to the processes of engagement and the importance of  
4064 young people choosing rather than being pressurized into taking part in the Fairbridge  
4065 programme. It is this voluntary relationship that becomes the motor of engagement and  
4066 consequent confidence building.



4067 Youth workers work in a low-key way to establish a sense of belonging and engagement  
4068 among young people who have already become disengaged from the system. Staff talked to  
4069 us about their deliberate strategies for creating a welcoming environment, the way they use  
4070 adventure activities to build a group, and the careful 'listening in' they do.

4071 Staff in Glasgow Fairbridge also engaged with us actively concerning the ethics of both  
4072 youth work and our research processes. During the discussion of the play 'Missing', two  
4073 young people who were participating talked about the experience of attempted suicide in  
4074 their own family and friendship circle, and one young man spoke about his own experience  
4075 of suicidal feelings and how he had found support from a friend. This strongly highlighted  
4076 the importance of our decision to tour the performance of 'Missing' with youth work  
4077 organisations where one-to-one support for young people already existed. It also  
4078 highlighted the centrality of the workers themselves, their communication skills, their  
4079 capacities for reflective and ethical practice, and the important role of supervision of  
4080 practice.

4081 In **Rhyl**, we worked in partnership with West Rhyl Young People's Project. This project is  
4082 based in a few rooms on a small street near the centre of Rhyl. The project has kept going  
4083 on a variety of shoe strings for many years, with an ethos of fighting social injustice and  
4084 inequality and building democratic literacy. At the time we were undertaking the research,  
4085 the project had once more narrowly escaped closure.

4086 We linked up with the regular drop in sessions. Jay, the youth worker, talked about the way  
4087 they have created groups to make sure that different friendship groups who do not feel  
4088 confident about encountering others can also use the project. We were told that West Rhyl  
4089 was a place that has experienced extremes of deprivation and a transient population. At

4090 least a third of the households did not originate from the area, but from Merseyside or  
4091 Greater Manchester, and the young people's group we worked with included one young  
4092 man who had grown up in Salford, Greater Manchester. The reasons why people relocate to  
4093 the North Wales coast are plentiful but none of them escape the challenges of poverty and  
4094 precarity. The criminal networks of urban areas, or the 'county lines', were also said by the  
4095 workers to have a hold in the drug culture in Rhyl. There had recently been a murder and a  
4096 conviction involving young people who were known to the youth workers, creating a deeper  
4097 sense of isolation and fear, which the youth workers were combating by creating a homely  
4098 atmosphere and a way of engaging young people in a whole range of opportunities,  
4099 including outdoor adventures and indoor creativity.

4100 This project was the least well-resourced of all the projects we visited, and perhaps in  
4101 consequence had a strong DIY ethos, with a sense of a flexible and creative response to  
4102 the young people that the project encountered and engaged. In terms of youth work as  
4103 method, this was a space in which the sense of young people as 'creators not  
4104 consumers' of youth work was strongest.

4105 During the evening, we talked with a group of young people about their self-  
4106 organisation of a successful and clearly hugely enjoyable camping trip, for which they  
4107 had raised funds to buy tents for the expedition on EBay and then taken the bus from  
4108 Rhyl to wild camp in the nearest mountain area accessible at the end of a bus journey.  
4109 We talked with another group of young people about the organising of an afternoon  
4110 youth club that enabled them to use the resources available through West Rhyl Youth  
4111 Project whilst avoiding another group who posed a threat.

## 4112 <2> Young people and loneliness: youth work, research and social action

4113 In the movement to raise awareness of and provide a contribution to countering  
4114 loneliness, youth work has had a significant part to play. In partnership with the #iwill  
4115 Fund, the Co-op Foundation spent £1 million on the 'Belong' network, which has more  
4116 than 80 members at the time of writing, of which the vast majority are based in youth  
4117 work projects that are undertaking social action. The #iwill Fund channelled money  
4118 from the UK Government via the charity 'Step Up to Serve', which was established in  
4119 2013 for this purpose. The Charity and Fund are set to close in 2020. The Belong  
4120 network, based in the Co-op Foundation, seems set to develop from strength to  
4121 strength and a new network called 'Spaces to Connect' has now emerged.

4122 However, the commitment to 'social action' as a buzzword for youth work should be  
4123 considered critically. In the same way, a medical model of loneliness which lends itself  
4124 to the suggestion that interventions by professionals such as social workers or youth  
4125 workers are needed in order to fix the problem needs to be questioned. We propose  
4126 seeing youth work and social action projects as part of a social infrastructure designed  
4127 to facilitate mutual support and enlivening. According to #iwill:

4128

4129 Currently 4 in 10 young people aged between 10 and 20 get involved in activities  
4130 that make a positive difference. However, research indicates that almost double  
4131 this number would take part in things like campaigning, fundraising and  
4132 volunteering if they had the chance. Further studies confirm that social action  
4133 develops 21st century employability skills, boosts access to further and higher  
4134 education and supports enhanced well-being among young people. It creates a

double benefit – to young people AND communities.

The #iwill campaign is working with hundreds of partner organisations from the business, education and voluntary sectors to enable young people, wherever they live and whatever their background, to have access to social action.

#iwill promoted the following model as descriptive of quality within social action:



Figure 1: #iwill youth social action model

The problem with this model is that it exists at a level of distance from the social reality of young people who are living in social conditions that exacerbate social isolation and loneliness. It has been proposed in a context of austerity or rather the reconstruction of a late neoliberal youth sector assemblage (McGimpsey, 2017) that has moved away

4148 from any kind of public service model. The highly temporary forms of commitment to  
4149 particular projects that accompanies this reconstruction and the strategies that  
4150 prepared the ground through the quasi-marketisation and commissioning of public  
4151 services have meant that in most cities, projects which previously existed as the 'last  
4152 nerve endings of the community' struggle to survive.

4153 The term 'social action' might potentially be heard in the context of a tradition of  
4154 'cultural action for freedom' in which a disruptive and unsettling movement within the  
4155 social nexus occurs during a liberatory pedagogic practice. This shift constitutes a shift  
4156 in participants' relation to their conditions of life. Rather than seeing conditions of life  
4157 as natural, unchanging and unable to be influenced by those who must endure poverty,  
4158 loneliness and exclusion, social and political education in youth work rooted in Freirean  
4159 thinking saw social action as a praxis that engaged with oppressive reality in order to  
4160 change it. In other words, 'social action' was understood as political, caught up in a  
4161 struggle over the power to name and read the world, and as a praxis, in which 'theory'  
4162 was more than 'blah' and 'action' more than 'unthinking activism' (Freire 1972).

4163 In contemporary discussions of social action, the idea of forming a 'habit for life' is  
4164 important and is less concerned with disruptive and unsettling change than with  
4165 sustaining and repairing the bonds of the social which have been neglected. The term  
4166 'social action' can easily be substituted by 'volunteering' and the work undertaken by  
4167 young people is most easily recognised as that strand of engagement in youth work  
4168 concerned with helping others and improving the quality of life in local  
4169 neighbourhoods. Litter picking and painting the village hall are common metaphors for  
4170 such practices as well as actual undertakings. The approach to youth work which such

4171 projects develop owes more to traditions of pedagogy as character formation and as  
4172 preparation for life's well established pathways. Unfortunately, the nature of the  
4173 economic reality is such that these 'well-established pathways' have been destroyed  
4174 (this is part of what is figured in the bland term 'postindustrial'), and little sense of what  
4175 might replace them beyond the call centres and distribution warehouses of global  
4176 megabusiness has emerged.

4177 In this context, youth work cannot but be ameliorative, seeking to replace bonds of  
4178 connection that austerity politics have systematically destroyed. Ian McGimpsey (2017)  
4179 has shown in his studies of the reconstruction of the youth sector how the shifts in  
4180 financing of the sector did not so much reduce spending, which was already limited, as  
4181 redirect and restructure it, and this is further borne out in the work of Bernard Davies.  
4182 For example, McGimpsey shows how between 2000/1 and 2007/8, UK Government  
4183 spending on the voluntary sector grew by more than £5 billion (55%) as the sector was used  
4184 to scale up public service provision. Following data from the National Council for Voluntary  
4185 Organisations, McGimpsey shows that while contractual purchasing accounted for half of all  
4186 money spent on the voluntary sector in 2001, by 2008 it was almost three quarters of a  
4187 larger pie. However, in the period of the Coalition Government and then the subsequent  
4188 Conservative Government, within the Early Intervention Grant (EIG) and following the  
4189 withdrawal of national output targets and ring-fenced funding, local quasi-markets of youth  
4190 services not only suffered but suffered *disproportionately*. The National Children's Bureau  
4191 and The Children's Society point out that, keeping budgetary definitions as consistent as  
4192 possible, funding within the EIG was reduced by 24% between 2010–2011 and 2014–2015.  
4193 However, levels of spending on youth services fell by around 30%, while family services fell  
4194 by as little as 4%. In 2012, the UK Coalition Government passed the Public Services (Social

4195 Value) Act, and it was from this point that the emphasis on investment and returns  
4196 developed. One new programme absorbed however a large amount of both funding and  
4197 political support, as the project of Prime Minister David Cameron; the National Citizen  
4198 Service (NCS). (The fiasco that this scheme has embodied is dispassionately detailed  
4199 elsewhere (Davies 2019)).

4200 Sara Mills, who has studied various embodiments of 'youth social action', has argued  
4201 that the scales of youth citizenship embedded in NCS promote engagement at the local  
4202 scale, as part of a national collective, while the global scale is curiously absent. She  
4203 argues secondly that discourses of youth citizenship are increasingly mobilised  
4204 alongside ideas of Britishness, yet fractured by the geographies of devolution. It is  
4205 increasingly evident that this is also a fracture line marked by poverty. Mills argues that:

4206

4207       Crucially, for NCS, this revolves around social action - the implication being that  
4208       these habits of increased levels of voluntary activity would then continue  
4209       throughout the lifecourse. This chimes with a number of recent moves in the UK  
4210       towards the construction and governance of citizens' behaviours and 'nudges'  
4211       (Jones, Pykett, & Whitehead, 2013). Although there is a universalising of the  
4212       'good' citizen here towards certain practices or habits rather than based on  
4213       social difference or markers of identity, the 'ideal' citizen is still classed and  
4214       racialized in relation to the target audience of NCS. There were, for example,  
4215       racialized and classed discourses of community cohesion and 'at risk' youth in  
4216       the scheme's early framing. Certainly in the branding and marketing of NCS, the  
4217       ideal citizen is now multi-racial, male or female, with aspirational classed

4218 messages about higher education, CVs and life-skills. The ‘social mix’ of NCS  
4219 graduates is primarily middle-class, with the evaluation of the 2014 Summer  
4220 programme (Ipsos MORI, 2015) having 20% eligible for free school meals, 26%  
4221 from ethnic minorities, although it still had on average far more female (71%)  
4222 than male participants.

4223 It is now impossible to argue, in such fractured times, that models of youth work which  
4224 emphasise voice, rights and empowerment alone can be adequate to the context in  
4225 which lonely and disempowered young people find themselves. It does, however,  
4226 remain the case that without a real and sustained attention to the framings created by  
4227 the power regimes operating in this new ‘youth sector’, social action programmes may  
4228 only serve to deepen existing divides.

4229 New framings for informal education are emerging, which build on earlier feminist and  
4230 radical pedagogies in emphasising the embodied nature of experiential learning, its  
4231 essentially connective character and its more than human locatedness (Ivinson). Such  
4232 re-framings also pay strong attention to the affective pre-cognitive and more than  
4233 cognitive, aesthetic and mobile dimensions of experience and learning. Projects have  
4234 names such as ‘Utopian Seedbanks’, ‘Rainbow Playground’ and ‘Feminist Webs.’ It is  
4235 worth considering these as signs of a wider more expansive and potentially  
4236 international view of social action.

## 4237 <2> Association as a counter-strategy against loneliness: the potential of clubs

4238 All the youth clubs and projects we engaged with were potentially offering important  
4239 buffers against loneliness to young people who attended. The following statements by  
4240 youth workers we engaged with through the research process give a strong sense of the



4241 level of attentiveness youth workers can give to the processes of engaging young people  
4242 who have become isolated and encouraging them into new forms of association:

4243

4244 There are some young people who come here to the open youth club who are  
4245 really shy and one of them has been really badly bullied. I started talking to them  
4246 as part of the street outreach session and I realised that they wouldn't come to  
4247 the open drop in if certain other people were there. So I started opening up a bit  
4248 earlier for them so they can have their own little club session where they can feel  
4249 safe and build up their confidence. (Youth Worker, Group Discussion)

4250

4251 Getting across the doorstep and acknowledging that you are looking for support  
4252 is probably the hardest thing for the young people. There's one young person  
4253 who comes regularly and says it has taken a year to do it. Once they have done  
4254 that, the rest is easier. I say to them, there isn't any-one who comes through that  
4255 door who doesn't need support. (Youth Worker)

4256

4257 Our first session of the twelve week programme, there is a big welcome  
4258 breakfast and there are a lot of staff there. Everyone who comes has been visited  
4259 and texted ahead, sometimes several times, and everyone has a one-to-one  
4260 relationship with a staff member who sometimes accompanies them to the first  
4261 session. (Youth Worker)

4262

4263 When there is a good level of resource available, youth work projects and youth clubs can  
4264 offer various opportunities to do things together. The widest offer we saw was at N-Gage in  
4265 Ballymena, and we would like to see all young people involved in youth work having these  
4266 opportunities. The programme in Ballymena included residentials to do adventure activities,  
4267 but also spa weekends, creative writing courses, music and DJing, Fan Fiction workshops,  
4268 knitting and crafts as well as the discussion groups 'Discuss with No Fuss' and 'Chill and  
4269 Spill'. The Hub also offered a relaxing garden space, aromatherapy and acupuncture.

4270 Youth work can be experienced at its most powerful when it is initiated from within a  
4271 community which works autonomously in the face of oppression, and in search of an  
4272 education for liberation. We encountered this most strongly in our research in the  
4273 experience of queer and trans\* youth projects and the ways in which they were developing  
4274 residential experience as the basis for a counterculture of mutual support and affirmation in  
4275 the face of a wider environment that contains much hostility. 'Rainbow Playground' is an  
4276 example of a time when young people from LGBTQI+ projects can come together to enjoy  
4277 themselves and take part in activities together without having to deal with the persistent  
4278 expectation of a hostile environment. Coming into a youth group that can be seen as a 'safe  
4279 enough space' and a 'brave enough space' on the basis of a shared experience, label or even  
4280 perhaps identity, is a well-established practice, drawing on the experience of a range of  
4281 wider social movements. The process enables those involved to claim a label in order to  
4282 reject a label, but also to explore its implications and the range of relationships between  
4283 experience and acceptance, distance, challenge, creation and recreation of namings for that  
4284 experience. In the context of the experience of a Proud Trust project, one young person  
4285 talked about how she had negotiated her changing sense of self and her acceptance and  
4286 affirmation of her experience. She talked about becoming Spikey:

4287

4288           ‘I was dangerous to myself, if you know what I mean: that’s what stopped places  
4289           being safe most of all. By being Spikey, Well I’m out there now; they can’t put me  
4290           down any more; well, they can put me down but its harder for them when I’m  
4291           stronger and more confident...they can still put me down, they do still put me down;  
4292           but it’s harder.’ (Anon, Manchester)

4293   This same young person spoke about singing and lip-synching as parts of performance and  
4294   being out there – something they had always been good at – as a powerful way of being  
4295   strong.

4296   Practices of welcoming are very much emphasised in queer youth groups, as is acceptance  
4297   of people’s chosen names and pronouns. There is much discussion of names chosen,  
4298   accepted and rejected; of names chosen from fiction (vampire names); of names woven  
4299   together to make a new sense of possibility.

4300   Youth workers characteristically recognise that response makes a difference. People make  
4301   places welcoming or unwelcoming. One young person told us that after they had been  
4302   mercilessly teased through high school without teachers doing anything (even though then  
4303   they were simply presenting as a lesbian not as trans\*), they had failed all their exams as a  
4304   result, but retaken them and eventually got into sixth form college. Then they had simply  
4305   taken the step of enrolling under a new name and as a boy at the sixth form college, and  
4306   that the staff there had been brilliant. For this young person, youth workers had made all  
4307   the difference as they had been supported through their school experience in their youth  
4308   group for seven years. After this, they had chosen to speak out and support others, even  
4309   sharing their own sense of struggle and difficulty, as a way of becoming more confident and

4310 making spaces more welcoming, taking part in arts activities such as TransVegas (a trans\*  
4311 arts festival) even whilst being terrified.

4312 It is significant that the practice of youth work in so many queer and trans\* youth projects is  
4313 consistent with a very traditional and well-established set of approaches to open youth  
4314 work. The earliest explorations of experiential learning emphasised adventure, association  
4315 and challenge, and these remain at the core of the work of the clubs and spaces we  
4316 encountered in our research. The creation of 'Rainbow' spaces enables the group and  
4317 association to be the source of learning and affirmation, starting from strengths rather than  
4318 pathologies or deficiencies. Paradoxically, this enables consistency of a sense of self and  
4319 capacities beyond gender and sexuality to be recognised, and this recognition is part of the  
4320 continuing relationality and conversation that can occur in youth clubs.

4321 One young person who was doing a media course and had a placement with CBeebies  
4322 explained:

4323 "I always knew that somehow that I could tell children's stories. I did graphics at college  
4324 and I carried on creating narratives in different media for members of my family and for my  
4325 youth group. It was something they were good at, whatever else was happening." (Alex,  
4326 Salford, aged 19)

4327 In the final chapter, we will consider some traditional forms of collective action, including  
4328 trade unionism and co-operative action. It is the case that some youth work should be  
4329 considered alongside these as a form of community-based collective action, which builds  
4330 solidarities and combats loneliness, as well as enabling creativity. It is at its best a  
4331 sophisticated and complex practice which works best within the time frames of  
4332 responsiveness and listening and improvisation, rather than of targets and outcomes.



## **<1> Chapter 13: Creativity and solidarity as method: the example of ‘Missing’ and other stories**

The partnership between academic research, youth work and creative arts practice was critical to the success of this project. The immersive theatre performance ‘Missing’ is presented in detail in this chapter, to show how collaboration and creativity were harnessed before, during and after the performances to enable a living response to loneliness and friendship.

‘Missing’ was an immersive theatre performance that explored the way loneliness emerges in the life of a quite ordinary and academically successful seventeen-year-old girl, ‘Jessica’. Jessica is not without friends and has a part-time job with a small income and a social life. Rather than engaging as audience members, participants pieced together the evidence about why Jessica had ‘gone missing’. The audience was presented with a range of clues and stimuli, from video footage of her friends to a personal diary and her playlists, and they were invited to explore and interpret the fragments of ‘Jessica’s’ life for signs and experiences that eventually lead to questions of loneliness and connection.

In arriving at this production and its work in generating further conversations about young people and loneliness, the research team were weaving together three significant threads. Firstly, our research context in the Education and Social Research Institute at Manchester Metropolitan University is one of a research community with a strong interest in the aesthetic, the playful and the sensory, as part of what is termed a new materialist and more-than-human turn in research. Secondly, the context of youth work and informal education provides access to a practice of socio-cultural animation, a framing of work most fully developed in a European context in France, Italy and Spain but also present in the UK.

4357 Thirdly, and overlapping with both of these, there is the context of socially engaged applied  
4358 theatre in which immersive theatre is currently the predominant form of practice. The  
4359 Creative Director of The Horsfall Project and part of the 42<sup>nd</sup> Street creative team, Julie  
4360 McCarthy, had extensive experience of this. We can identify therefore the research-creation  
4361 practice which occurred as emerging from and shaped by a number of communities  
4362 (Springgay & Truman 2018).

4363 In considering and crafting a process that might enable academic researchers and non-  
4364 specialist researchers who were experts through lived experience to work together in a  
4365 research project on youth loneliness, an epistemology rooted in recognising situated and  
4366 unrecognised or frequently discredited knowledges was significant. The research-creation  
4367 approach flowed from this, in part also because it seemed apparent that engaging with this  
4368 subject of loneliness directly could be difficult, raising as it does a level of self-protective  
4369 defensiveness. Rather than taking a confessional or individualist approach to personal  
4370 experience, the research team was inspired by feminist engagements with  
4371 phenomenological understanding that developed a range of ways of reading personal  
4372 experience as knowledge bearing, and as political. In consequence therefore such  
4373 engagements offer a powerful lens on the social experience of loneliness (Ahmed 2006;  
4374 Code 1991; Haraway 1988).

4375 Research creation allows an approach to working with personal experience without  
4376 overburdening either that experience or the people who bear it with public exposure and its  
4377 freight of potential meanings. Arts-based methods, in a 'new materialist' and 'more than  
4378 human' frame also have the potential to reach below, above and around particular  
4379 experiential moments, into the sensory environment of all our thinking-feeling (Ivinson &

4380 Renold 2019), and to enable a deepening of sensory engagements in which both knowledge  
4381 and its accompanying uncertainty are tangibly co-created (Stewart 2007). There has been  
4382 powerful recent attention to the auditory dimension of experience in ways which can  
4383 engage a deeper listening and which can enable noises far off to be heard and sometimes,  
4384 though not necessarily, to be recognised as meaning bearing (Oliveros 2005; Back 2007).

4385 The second significant thread that fed into 'Missing' was an approach to creativity which  
4386 emerged from the traditions of youth work as a community-based practice of socio-cultural  
4387 animation with roots in philosophical enquiry. Loneliness can be seen as a form of solitude  
4388 that has continued longer than was desired and solitude has often been seen as a source of  
4389 creativity. As Professor Barbara Taylor has pointed out, solitude can take on many forms,  
4390 including the poetic, the academic and the religious. For the opening lecture of the  
4391 Pathologies of Solitude research project, Taylor wrote:

4392

4393 Solitude can be experienced as a privileged condition for people who are religious  
4394 but it is also associated with knowledge [...] Between the 17<sup>th</sup> to 19<sup>th</sup> centuries  
4395 solitude could be used to refer to leisure, daydreaming and even melancholy. For  
4396 others it referred to truth. Knowledge seekers would deliberately set themselves  
4397 apart from others as they undertook solitary study.

4398

4399 The tradition of socio-cultural animation in youth work and community education also  
4400 directs attention to those streams in practice and those moments which are more than  
4401 rational or instrumental and values, in ways often termed a Romantic approach to youth  
4402 work: an approach to practice which can include exploring the experience of solitude, and



4403 also the experience of awe and wonder. Youth work in this account is both more and other  
4404 than either therapy or upskilling. It is animation.

4405 Animation is concerned with movement and stirring, touching and probing, repetitions and  
4406 changes of beat, experimentation, and the sonic and phatic presences and absences that  
4407 underlie speech. It is rooted in attention to breathing life into what has been perceived as  
4408 dead. This breath is what enables speech but also many other non-verbal expressions. Such  
4409 animation underlies all the approaches we were tuning in to.

4410 Youth work has been described as a practice that is rehearsed but improvised. The affinity  
4411 with live performance – either musical or dramatic – is obvious here, but the account of this  
4412 is rarely developed. Working in a transdisciplinary network – as we were able to do in this  
4413 research project – undoubtedly enabled the expansion of our thinking about this metaphor  
4414 and lived practice of both rehearsal and improvisation. There is a clear posited connection  
4415 between the disciplines of rehearsal that are necessarily repeated many times, as a musical  
4416 score is practiced until it can be played, and improvisation, which is new and draws on a  
4417 moment of gift in creativity.

4418 Informal (or non-formal) education, to give youth work one of its names, involves both  
4419 conscious effort and non-effort, a shaping process and a following of hunches and intuitions,  
4420 a going with the flow. This turning point, when effort ceases and non-effort begins, is the  
4421 very moment when creativity happens (Milner 1937). The production of ‘Missing’ was  
4422 disciplined, crafted, prepared meticulously, active and skilled. But it also involved moments  
4423 that were new and emergent and cried out to be recognised each time it was performed,  
4424 including things that were stumbled over in the process.

4425 The third context for engaging with the theme of creativity in our project involved the  
4426 practice of socially engaged applied theatre, with roots in Augusto Boal's (1970)  
4427 engagement with Paolo Freire, in Theatre of the Oppressed and Legislative Theatre. Applied  
4428 theatre has recently moved into an engagement with immersive theatre. In doing so, it  
4429 responds to the change of conditions of contemporary living in which reality TV, live  
4430 tweeting and constant virtual engagement might be said to create both a taste for rapid  
4431 movement into a performance and a thirst for direct and potentially intimate experience. By  
4432 abolishing 'the fourth wall' and avoiding the civic spaces designated as theatres, it is  
4433 possible to move the theatrical experience and make it more accessible to a wider range of  
4434 audiences. This happened in 'Missing' with the tour to a number of youth centres that we  
4435 discussed earlier. Young people whose spaces we entered became 'trainee officers' in a  
4436 missing persons scenario, which it was the task of their teams to solve. As previously  
4437 discussed, they did through responding to the staged introduction of clues concerning the  
4438 life of Jessica.

4439 Jana Wendler and Tricia Coleman, the designers of 'Missing', were drawing on their  
4440 expertise in designing experimental games spaces and theatre production. They both  
4441 participated in research workshops and designed a session for re-engagement with the  
4442 research data in the process of creating 'Missing'. As a result, there was no precise  
4443 distinction between the processes of the research and the processes of making the  
4444 performance, although different teams were clearly bringing specific expertise to bear. As  
4445 we have noted, solitude is well-established by thinkers associated with the broad stream of  
4446 psychoanalytic thought (particularly those associated with Jung and Winnicott, such as  
4447 Anthony Storr and Marian Milner) as a critical basis for creativity. From these perspectives  
4448 therefore, the intermingling of a research project that might unsettle received ideas about

4449 loneliness with a body of applied theatre practice (a creative but definitionally not solitary  
4450 practice) was important.

4451 Undertaking study other than in a solitary way, as we did in this collaborative research ,  
4452 might enabled us to question further ‘who are we with when we are thinking?’ and to  
4453 experience a solidaristic aspect of creativity and hence even to loneliness. Who we were  
4454 with was no longer the inner world of experience alone but also the practical team who  
4455 made and toured the show. The driver and route finder and props manager and actor were  
4456 co-thinkers about loneliness too. In the following account of the creation of ‘Missing’, we  
4457 highlight some of the methods used for this developing thinking/feeling together.

#### 4458 **The Method of ‘Missing’**

4459 The story of Jessica emerged after a number of early experiments, including the idea of a  
4460 redesigned card game, based on the game ‘Donkey’ or ‘Old Maid’ in which we all do  
4461 everything possible not to be left with the ‘odd’ card at the end of the game. Playing  
4462 versions of this game to explore the feelings of isolation and competition, of targeting or  
4463 avoiding one another on the basis of randomly assigned characteristics, gave the research  
4464 team some direct access to feelings which contribute to the painfulness of loneliness and  
4465 isolation.

4466 In the next stage of development, the research team worked with a research method first  
4467 used by the socialist feminist scholar and activist Frigga Haug, which has recently been re-  
4468 engaged with by new materialist scholars (Haug 1992; Gonick & Gannon 2014). It involves  
4469 the retelling of narratives related to loneliness that had been gathered and shared in the  
4470 earliest stages of the project. Haug’s method of ‘Memory Work’ involves retelling and  
4471 rewriting experiences in the third person. It enables simultaneously a deepening of

4472 engagement with experience and a loosening of connection between the words and the  
4473 particular authors of them. It is a very precise way of making evident how the personal is  
4474 both social and political. In the process, loneliness becomes something that, as well as being  
4475 intensely private, can somehow be shared. It was in this process that that the idea that  
4476 'loneliness connects us' developed further as a theme for the project. During the sessions  
4477 that worked with this method, a straight young woman retold a queer narrative and a group  
4478 of UK based Manchester students retold the story first told by a refugee. In doing so, the  
4479 recognition of shared experience was made tangible both to those who might have  
4480 originated stories and those who retold them.

4481 Telling stories that originated elsewhere deepens a sense of solidarity, and listening to  
4482 others retell stories that may have had an original link with one's own lifeworld extends and  
4483 deepens recognition of the normality and prevalence of loneliness across a spectrum of  
4484 experiences. This was the process from which the 'normal' character of Jessica, the girl in  
4485 the play who has gone 'Missing', emerged.

4486 The story-boarding and creation of the engine of the plot of the play (the detective  
4487 enquiring into a mystery is a classic metaphor for scientific research enquiry) was then  
4488 undertaken by Jana Wendler and Trish Coleman, the specialists. This involved recognising  
4489 the key aspects of transition for a young person that might provoke loneliness: the exam  
4490 grades, the family pressure, the lack of money, the girlfriend/boyfriend issues, and more.  
4491 The ways in which the necessary information flowed into the immersive experience of the  
4492 missing person's investigation was skilfully crafted in order to bring the missing person's  
4493 inquiry to a satisfactory conclusion when it was undertaken by, say, three teams of five, and  
4494 within half an hour of concentrated action.

4495 The next stage of development was the pre-tour testing of the performance with the young  
4496 members of the research team; this led to significant changes to props and clues to make  
4497 them more recognisable to people Jessica's age, including details of the letter about college  
4498 attendance and about the kinds of energy drinks she might have in her backpack. It was also  
4499 in this stage of the creation of Jessica's story that the significance of her relationships  
4500 beyond her immediate family, for example with aunts and uncles and grandparents,  
4501 emerged. The script for the lead actor was written and amended, and this part was  
4502 developed by Jane Whittaker, an actor specially recruited by the creative team because of  
4503 their experience of previous collaborations. 'Missing' was then ready to tour, accompanied  
4504 by three members of the research team.

4505 In preparing for the tour, the process of engagement was supported by youth workers at  
4506 42<sup>nd</sup> Street and then by youth workers in the projects we visited, which were presented  
4507 briefly in Chapter 12. The preparation included sending out both information about the play  
4508 (the kinds of rooms needed and the length of time it took; the number of participants we  
4509 could accommodate) and information about the research, with a suggestion concerning  
4510 some of the complex issues that the play might provoke for young people. And, indeed, in  
4511 each of the sites in which 'Missing' was performed, there was searching and intimate  
4512 conversation, both before and after the performance, which moved rapidly into a discussion  
4513 of difficult and painful subjects, including that of attempted suicide. The 'immersiveness' of  
4514 the experience had its anticipated effects of rapidly opening up the conversation and the  
4515 mutual exploration of a potentially difficult subject.

4516 Space was a significant feature of this process, as the transformation of the everyday spaces  
4517 of youth clubs and projects into missing persons investigation rooms was immediately

4518 powerful, accompanied as it was by the actor playing the Police Commanding Office issuing  
4519 a direct set of instructions as the participants/audience entered the space. The youth club  
4520 space, constructed out of the buildings often designed by architects for quite other  
4521 purposes in any case, became temporarily deconstructed as a new space of theatrical  
4522 performance emerged. It was abstracted by the creative designers of 'Missing',  
4523 reconstructed by the performers and then by the performers with the young participants.

4524 The immersive sensual experiences then included hands-on opening and closing of  
4525 envelopes and exploration of materials found, evoked by family snapshots, a can of energy  
4526 drink, a wage slip with deductions, a cuddly toy. The design of the piece fully engaged  
4527 participants in a new world, and what had happened to Jessica, the girl who has gone  
4528 'Missing', and why, became an urgent issue.

4529 After each performance, there was a conversation with participants, which, in every case,  
4530 added to and deepened the findings concerning young people's accounts of the experience  
4531 of loneliness. At the same time, it confirmed the potential of the more than rational as a  
4532 source of knowing, stimulated by and also embedded in arts practice, in this case, theatre as  
4533 a mode of enquiry. In the conversation, we passed round the props and invited participants  
4534 to say something about them, carrying the affective intensity of the play into the post-  
4535 performance discussion.

4536 Collaborative research in applied theatre has recently very helpfully been discussed as a  
4537 form of polyphony (Mackey 2016) Across the visual arts, ideas of 'socially engaged practice'  
4538 emerged based in the ideas of Bourriaud (2002), with the recognition that moments of  
4539 sociality or what are termed 'micro-utopias' might occur in ways that translate meaningfully  
4540 outside the performance spaces. The experience of taking part in 'Missing' had aspects of

4541 'micro-utopia': a question remains as to what extent this has had impact beyond the  
4542 performance spaces. Because theatre is inherently social, this relationality as a source of  
4543 practicing and imagining otherwise is readily understood and experienced and could have  
4544 been all the more powerful and micro-utopian as a response to the theme of separation and  
4545 lack of relationality which is loneliness.

4546 The discussion of practice research in applied theatre has therefore swiftly moved away  
4547 from an autoethnographic focus on the performer or performance towards a focus on other  
4548 people, and more generally to accept a broader and more explicitly social and political  
4549 research enquiry: the example in our case of the focus on 'loneliness'. It is also self-evidently  
4550 the case in applied theatre that research processes are shared with many voices and this  
4551 leads to questioning about taken for granted authority and authorship, usually vested in  
4552 universities.

4553 One of the consequences of so multiple and various an input into a research project is that  
4554 there are multiple and unarticulated negotiations of power and hierarchies of knowledge.  
4555 This is the reason that the metaphor of polyphony is so productive. As Sally Mackey (2016)  
4556 has written:

4557

4558 Polyphony suggests a number of different voices participating in the overall project,  
4559 frequently following their own routes and independent needs, sometimes  
4560 harmonious and occasionally not. Within this polyphony are moments of  
4561 homophony, where all voices join together into one clear and combined melodic  
4562 line. There are also moments of monophony, where singular voices can be heard  
4563 quite distinctly, as is the case so often in conversations. A conversation has a topic, a

4564 focus, matter. In utilising this metaphor, immediately the subject matter of the  
4565 research is centrally positioned, therefore, the 'conversation' is about the research  
4566 focus.

4567

4568 And it was indeed the case that after the performances of 'Missing', the research focus of  
4569 loneliness became the shaping focus of the conversation. Nevertheless, in each of the  
4570 performance spaces, both the intensity of the immersive experience and the singularity of  
4571 the place where the performance occurred brought clear new insights into the continuing  
4572 conversation. Themes of coastal towns and their complex problems emerged in Rhyl; as well  
4573 as this, the issue of poverty and the impact of austerity policies emerged in Great Yarmouth;  
4574 in Ballymena the focus on the experience of 'being different' emerged, as did the issue of  
4575 what is hidden, through the attention paid to 'hidden harm'; in Glasgow, the theme of  
4576 attempted suicide (which emerged everywhere) came powerfully to the fore alongside and  
4577 balanced by a strong affirmation of the importance of friendship. In each place too,  
4578 individual young people spoke at length and in monophonies of incredible and affecting  
4579 beauty.

4580 In these ways, creative practices have played a central role in the research reported on in  
4581 this book, and in the process they have also emerged as important sources of support in  
4582 young people's responses to loneliness. We have discussed the performance of 'Missing' in  
4583 some detail and depth in order to illuminate the relational approach to aesthetics and the  
4584 potential of creativity to combat loneliness both through solitude and through association  
4585 and solidarity. In chapters throughout this book, contributions made by young people in  
4586 response to the performance of 'Missing' can be found.



4587 There is however also other evidence in our study for the claim that creativity is a method of  
4588 responding to loneliness. In particular, we found numerous examples of young people's  
4589 capacities to develop ways of connecting through creating momentary shared projects,  
4590 many of which, though not all, were creative.

4591 **<2> Something to do together and alone: the importance of shared interests and**  
4592 **creativity**

4593 Bike repairs; making YouTube films; volunteering in the Oxfam shop; playing in a South  
4594 Korean football team and winning the 'best foreign player' medal even though you're  
4595 English; spa visits; dancing; making a radio programme; going fishing and joining an angling  
4596 club; playing the ukulele in a ukulele band; training and partnering one another in keeping  
4597 fit and healthy. Some of these we did together as a group of co-researchers and some we  
4598 heard of others doing. Not all of these are artistic activities, but the element of play that is  
4599 integral to creativity is a significant aspect of all of them.

4600 Play is something intrinsically self-initiated and not directed towards compliance with  
4601 others; it is attunement to interest, curiosity and enjoyment. The ability to play is seen as  
4602 the grounding through which we work through the anxieties and complexities involved in  
4603 our being both separate from and connected to others, from our early childhood separation  
4604 from our (m)other onwards. It may be through play that we learn first the capacity to be  
4605 both alone with ourselves and in the company of others, without feeling overwhelmed or  
4606 abandoned.

4607 Listening to music was comforting in lonely times; sometimes listening in to the sadness and  
4608 loneliness of others – spoken and not spoken – helped in knowing that you are not alone.  
4609 Music flows into the cracks where other things cannot go. Making music can be another

4610 shared interest. And for several young people we encountered, it was writing poetry, often  
4611 inspired by song lyrics, that had given them a way to cope with their loneliness:

4612

4613       ‘You may get to a boundary where the loneliness is beginning to affect your health  
4614       and then a persistent negative train of thought is setting in. I have used a website  
4615       where I wrote and posted my own poems as a way of looking after myself. Creativity  
4616       and poetry is a way to let out feelings; you can interact with the page even when you  
4617       can’t interact with people.’ (Sumaiya, aged 23, Manchester)

4618

4619 But, while recognising the importance of art and creativity, other co-researchers expressed  
4620 a caution:

4621 “You could be a genius as an artist or a poet and still need help and reassurance in the  
4622 everyday. A big difference between loneliness and solitude is being able to be creative and  
4623 work in the everyday” (Rebecca, aged 19, Manchester).

4624 For some young people, such activities offered a temporary and vital distraction from a  
4625 preoccupation with painful experience and from a persistent loneliness. And for some, the  
4626 need for distraction also developed into forms of escapism. Play is significant for  
4627 development, and in the face of various feelings of vulnerability, anxiety and helplessness,  
4628 young people enjoy the stories of Harry Potter and identify with a variety of superheroes.  
4629 Fantasy, including fantasy games of many kinds, provide ways of handling trauma (as  
4630 discussed in Chapter 8), and finding ways of negotiating feelings of isolation and  
4631 powerlessness. Young people also mentioned ways of escaping into another world,

4632 including the world of religion, as a way of avoiding loneliness: “Religion and prayer and  
4633 ritual can have a calming influence” (Gil, aged 23, Manchester).

4634 It is controversial to reduce the role of religion to mere escapism and illusion. However  
4635 seeing the need for ‘the opium of the people, the heart of a heartless world’ being  
4636 expressed in religion is a well-established understanding of the worldly consolations that  
4637 religion can provide. These include an identity and an opportunity to belong. Religious belief  
4638 and the following of the Prophet (pbuh), God or Enlightened One can undoubtedly stand in  
4639 a more substantial way as giving access to a superpower, similar to the way fantasy  
4640 operates. As Alice Walker indicated in her novel *The Colour Purple*, the need for this kind of  
4641 faith may diminish once personal needs for power and security are met in other more  
4642 mundane ways.

4643 At the same time, it can be said that contemplative prayer and meditation practices offer  
4644 access to a sense of the divine presence, a ground of being and becoming that underpins all  
4645 things and is utterly unconditional. Such access can provide a way of admitting,  
4646 acknowledging and facing difficulty rather than avoiding it, as is perhaps too easily assumed  
4647 to be the escapist function of religion. When the divine is experienced as a source of  
4648 enhancing rather than avoiding life, it is less likely that such practice is abandoned when life  
4649 circumstances change.

## 4650 <2> Creativity, solitude and solidarity

4651 The connections between creativity and solitude and between solitude and solidarity are  
4652 being obscured in the current social and moral panic about loneliness. If, as Barbara Taylor  
4653 has argued, loneliness is a pathology of solitude, it is important to value experiences of  
4654 solitude and stillness and offer opportunities to practice them and find their connectedness

4655 with experiences of solidarity and collaboration as a part of childhood and adolescence. It is  
4656 very important that we do not regard young people choosing to spend time alone as  
4657 inherently pathological, and young people and adults need to be given every opportunity to  
4658 explore the positive experience of solitude. Paradoxically, such opportunities are rare, even  
4659 in a society in which it is claimed that loneliness is on the increase.

4660 One place where it may be found is in the linking of creativity with the capacity for dreams  
4661 and meditation and what is sometimes called ‘spirituality’, as well as in traditional religious  
4662 practices associated with monasticism. It is also interesting that some libraries in cities, with  
4663 their traditions of offering spaces for silence, are becoming important ‘youth’ spaces, and  
4664 also places where many outsiders of various tribes are finding a home.

4665 Since the capacity for solitude can be strongly and positively linked to creativity, there are  
4666 also strong associations between the capacity for solitude and the capacity for solidarity. In  
4667 monastic traditions of both Buddhism and Christianity, this is related to the development of  
4668 the capacity for compassion. Creativity, solidarity and friendship can emerge from such  
4669 compassion, making the possibility of meaningful connection stronger, and the need for  
4670 forms of connection which intensify loneliness less urgent. In order to enable young people  
4671 to continue to develop their resources to respond to loneliness, we need to offer more  
4672 positive experiences of both connection and solitude. Practices of creativity mediate this  
4673 movement into both a calming solitude and a practice of compassionate solidarity and co-  
4674 operation. Turning to the natural world as a resource – walking in parks, going fishing,  
4675 swimming in the sea – as well as the companionship of other animals, especially dogs, cats  
4676 and horses, needs to be recognised as an aspect of this turn to calmness and compassion,  
4677 which seems intrinsically linked to creativity.

## 4678 <2> Friendship and solidarity

4679 There were examples in every location of young people reaching out beyond their own  
4680 immediate context to offer wider forms of connection. We found this in creative practice  
4681 but also in the workplace as well as in less traditional forms. At the end of one of the  
4682 creative sessions in the second phase of the project, we became aware that the new  
4683 company, Deliveroo, had a base very close to the place where we were developing the  
4684 work, and the continual sight of young people working as Deliveroo drivers brought further  
4685 questions into the consciousness of the project.

4686 At first, the Manchester Metropolitan University research team saw the gig economy  
4687 Deliveroo driver as the epitome of a lonely and isolating society: a young man or, less  
4688 frequently, a woman, cycling alone through dark winter nights to deliver take away food to  
4689 people living alone in flats. This stereotype proved too one-dimensional, but it opened up  
4690 interesting discussions on changing experiences of work and how it creates opportunities  
4691 and structures for socialisation, belonging and friendship. One young person described their  
4692 experience working for Deliveroo:

4693

4694 'I am working because I dropped out of sixth-form college last year. I was on  
4695 completely the wrong course. I will go back to college to do A-Levels but not for six  
4696 months. I saw 'Taxidriver', the spoof film with Queen Latifah, and I thought it looked  
4697 fun to be a delivery driver. I applied to Deliveroo online. The job application was on  
4698 Facebook. Had an hour's training, which was a kind of interview. After that I was  
4699 given the app, and allocated a zone, and my uniform and box. There was a deposit of  
4700 £150 for the box which is deducted a certain amount per drop from earnings. The

4701 rate of pay is £6.50 an hour plus 50p per drop. 12 hours and 23 drops earns me  
4702 £100. I usually work Friday night, Saturday night and Sunday night with main  
4703 customers in new city centre blocks of flats in Timber Wharf and the Green Quarter.  
4704 I've learned new ways around the city: new paths. There's solidarity among  
4705 Deliveroo drivers, acknowledging each other and helping out if someone gets a  
4706 puncture. The money was good in the run up to Christmas but then has been poor  
4707 since. I won't do it much longer. It has soon stopped being fun.' (Joe, aged 17,  
4708 Manchester)

4709

4710 During the period in which we were working on this research, there was significant publicity  
4711 about trade union organising in the gig economy and the role that young workers were  
4712 taking in this new unionism. This also emerged in the research:

4713

4714 'I joined the Union this week. My nan is really proud of me. We were on Zero Hours  
4715 and no Contracts, no money except when they wanted you to work twelve hour  
4716 shifts and we were being kept off the car park area at Tesco's by Security Guards  
4717 when we weren't working.' (John, aged 18, Norwich)

4718

4719 Older forms of mutuality and solidarity, which seemed to have lost traction in the globalised  
4720 economy, were being turned to again and meeting with some success. One of the creative  
4721 workshops that we facilitated during the research project involved a session at the People's  
4722 History Museum, where we explored the archive of youth charters and youth activism in the  
4723 trade union movement. Not all forms of collective creativity and advocacy take the form of

4724 trade unionism however. Similarly, there was a recognition that advocacy on one's own  
4725 behalf and on behalf of others might be a means of countering loneliness: "I went to the  
4726 House of Commons on behalf of 42<sup>nd</sup> Street and I spoke about our research on youth  
4727 loneliness and how this links to mental health issues people face and how many more places  
4728 like 42nd Street there need to be" (Clayton, aged 21, Manchester). These forms of  
4729 collectively advocacy, classically associated with practices of voice and empowerment in  
4730 youth work, are now most often supported through artistic projects which bring creation to  
4731 voice. In doing so, they provide a platform to both support existing practices and  
4732 organisations and to begin to create new ways of being and doing that can subvert the  
4733 sense of loneliness and create new processes of connection.

4734 Young people articulated the possibilities of friendship and mutual support across a wide  
4735 spectrum of practices of association in our research. In so doing they have pointed the ways  
4736 to important counter-practices and occasional micro-utopias in the context of the social  
4737 conditions of loneliness.

## 4738 <1> Chapter 14 - New ways for thinking and feeling loneliness

4739 *Loneliness Connects Us* is the first significant UK study of youth loneliness with and from the  
4740 perspective of young people. The approach developed through youth work research and practice  
4741 methodologies, characterised by activity, association,( learning together by doing), and challenge.  
4742 We hosted weekly engagements with a core group of youth co-researchers to initiate a dialogue that  
4743 expanded and intensified through a carousel of moving methods. We talked to and debated with  
4744 one another. We talked as we made things. We listened to music together. We accompanied one  
4745 another to social occasions such as the theatre and restaurants. As the research progressed the  
4746 conversations amongst the youth co-research group were translated into an immersive theatre  
4747 performance that toured the UK to grow and contextualise the dialogue. We developed legacy  
4748 activities that included staging a youth summit, an online arts resource, and mobilising the project  
4749 findings through the mainstream media and with policy makers. In total we engaged over 200 young  
4750 people and had conversations with numerous professionals. It is the breadth and plurality of the  
4751 study's engagement with young people and youth loneliness that justifies the claim for the  
4752 research's significance, and made it such a privilege to undertake.

4753 This concluding chapter returns to the youth co-researchers' agenda to reflect on the findings and to  
4754 explore implications for the youth loneliness research and policy agenda. We argue for reversing the  
4755 individualisation of loneliness in research and practice in order to think in more expansive ways  
4756 about youth loneliness and belonging. This begins from a necessary engagement with difference  
4757 within the social and with the social conditions of loneliness including poverty, precarity and  
4758 inequality. Building on the youth work inspired creative co-produced methods, we propose ways to  
4759 re-found the youth loneliness agenda, specifically in committing to radical democratic practice. The  
4760 chapter concludes with the recommendations (which were made at the end of the research project  
4761 by the team) of things we can all do to help reduce youth loneliness



## 4762 <2> Loneliness beyond the individual

4763 We identified a problematic cluster of ways in which loneliness is conceptualised and  
4764 communicated: as contagious, a crisis, and individualising. The emotional contagion thesis is a  
4765 leading explanation of the spread and emergence of loneliness (Cacioppo 2009; Cacioppo, Fowler &  
4766 Christakis 2010). In addition, loneliness is described as an epidemic by academics, journalists and  
4767 politicians (Murthy 2016; Holt-Lunstad 2017; Easton 2018; Howe 2019). We do not argue that  
4768 emotions or affective states are not shared and shareable. There are studies that evidence the  
4769 communicability of positive and negative affect across time on online platforms (Kramer, Guillory  
4770 and Hancock 2014). If the Facebook algorithm serves up more negative content you are likely to  
4771 share more negative content. And we should not be surprised at this. By some accounts, the  
4772 capacity to affect and be affected is essential to what it means to be human (Massumi 2015).

4773 It is problematic however to think of loneliness as an epidemic in individualising ways within the  
4774 prevailing conditions of neoliberalism. The individualisation of loneliness is evident in prominent  
4775 definitions of loneliness within psychology (Peplau & Perlman 1982; de Jong-Gerveld 1987). Such  
4776 orientations emerging from psychology studies readily translate into advice for individual lonely  
4777 young people on how to they as individuals can navigate loneliness, as in the advice emerging from  
4778 the BBC Loneliness Experiment. Such advice can all too easily be taken up in and frame  
4779 neoliberalising governmentality strategies that work to responsibilise young people for resolving the  
4780 challenges they might encounter in life through resilience, grit and character (Burman 2018; Allen &  
4781 Bull 2018).

4782 In challenging the individualisation of loneliness, it is nonetheless important to recognise that the  
4783 young people we engaged with understood loneliness as a personal and individual experience. For  
4784 example, in the quotes below loneliness is described in terms of feelings of disconnection from  
4785 oneself or a situation and in terms of the physical and psychological effects of loneliness,

4786 “Loneliness... it’s when you don’t feel connected. You’re there, but you’re not really there in your  
4787 head.” (Christine, 19 years old, Manchester)

4788 “It can really hurt. It has so much effect on your body as well. It can make you really, really not trust  
4789 anyone.” (Luke, 17, Great Yarmouth)

4790 Thinking of lonely individuals and of inter-personal responses to it are very accessible ways of  
4791 thinking about loneliness. Thus loneliness is presented as the negative experience of individuals  
4792 without sufficient quality or quantity of social connection, which can be remedied by additional  
4793 individuals. However, through the research we observed changing and nuanced relationships of  
4794 friendship and obligations of care and support that escaped this neat account. Although not  
4795 impossible we found these ideas harder to describe and make legible in comparison to more familiar  
4796 commitments relating to individual responsibility and resourcefulness. The following example is  
4797 offered as one among many examples of such relationality we heard of.

4798 One of our co-researchers – Patience – provided an explanation of loneliness that became significant  
4799 in the research findings,

4800 Loneliness means something different to everyone because everyone experiences things differently.  
4801 But I don’t think people should be afraid of loneliness. All your emotions are important... if you’re  
4802 lonely it means it you’re missing out on something, you need that social connection. (Patience, 20  
4803 years old)

4804 Patience was often wise and articulate in describing youth loneliness. Documenting and amplifying  
4805 her statements was a constructive act for this youth participatory research. This quote was one that  
4806 resonated with a range of different audiences as we communicated the research findings. The  
4807 research funder, for example, named one of their reports on loneliness, ‘All our emotions are  
4808 important’ (Co-op Foundation 2018). It is important, however, to acknowledge that this was one  
4809 insight from one young woman and that there were different perspectives within the co-research

4810 team. We, as academics, had selected it for inclusion in the project report and in turn found it  
4811 interesting to consider why Patience's message received such a ready audience.

4812 The tone suggests the self-help genre: a wise voice demystifying the world for an uninformed *other*.  
4813 The location of the response is seemingly with the lonely young person to appreciate that their  
4814 feelings of loneliness mean *they* should take action and re-connect with people. If lonely people  
4815 must take action then we need to ask what the implications are for the rest of us who at this  
4816 particular point in time are not lonely individuals?

4817 It might seem unfair to pick apart Patience's quote or the positive response in this way. The point  
4818 here however is that her words that became so prominent in the initial communication of the  
4819 research findings do not convey her multiple and profound contributions to the project. For  
4820 example, Patience had a close relationship with one of the other youth co-researchers, Mark. He  
4821 attended the project to help deal with mental health issues and feelings of loneliness as did (in some  
4822 form, articulated or not) all who became involved with the research including the youth workers  
4823 and academic researchers. We know that loneliness can be experienced as a form of social pain  
4824 (Cacioppo et al. 2011) and be accompanied by anxiety and hyper-vigilance in the exaggerated  
4825 perceptions of threat through social interactions (Qualter et al. 2013). A lonely young person may  
4826 therefore be anxious, awkward and resist or misinterpret offers of social connection and friendship.  
4827 At various times throughout the project Mark was challenging, difficult and angry yet Patience  
4828 always seemed to support him. In turn Patience attended the project for her own reasons, only  
4829 rarely shared, and Mark accepted her company over many weeks and encouraged her advocacy  
4830 work which she frequently undertook on behalf of 42<sup>nd</sup> Street. Out of role as an advocate, Patience  
4831 was often very quiet and diffident. Patience's words used in the initial project report powerfully  
4832 communicate the need for lonely young people to take action to connect with others to reduce their  
4833 loneliness. But beyond this she offered alongside others an expansive practice of care which became  
4834 a conscious politics as she took up the role of advocate for young people suffering mental health

4835 difficulties, a role that requires a more complex and powerful set of commitments. And Mark made  
4836 all of us laugh. This relationship of often uneven mutuality seemed to in practice move far beyond 'If  
4837 you are lonely you have to connect' to a recognition of what is involved when people are there for  
4838 one another for a while. This continuous support happened even when any one of us at any given  
4839 moment became anxious and defensive and appeared difficult.

4840 We witnessed and sometimes participated in these changing relationships of care and obligation in  
4841 many aspects of the research, both with Patience and indeed with Mark in his qualms about posting  
4842 social media content that might pressure others to drink excessively. The difficulty in describing  
4843 these relationships and obligations beyond the individual certainly arises from a long established  
4844 shift to isolate and reduce social relations to the terms of the sovereign individual. The Invisible  
4845 Committee (2015) teach us that,

4846 "Friend" and "free" in English ... come from the same Indo-European root, which conveys the idea of  
4847 a shared power that grows. Being free and having ties was one and the same thing. I am free  
4848 because I have ties, because I am linked to a reality greater than me." (2015, 127)

4849 Where once to be free was to be with ones friends, freedom is now typically understood as defining  
4850 the rights and autonomies of the liberal individual (bergman and Montgomery 2017). The most  
4851 powerful aspects of this research have been those that point to ways to repair these languages and  
4852 capacities of relationality. In so doing we can create new potentials for convivial communities, while  
4853 maintaining a deep concern for difference. As the work continues we see a role for engaging with  
4854 loneliness through theories and methodologies that work to think beyond the individual-collective  
4855 (Read, 2017). In thinking about social connection we need to think about collectivity. To do this we  
4856 learn from the ideas of transindividuality (Balibar, 1997; Read, 2017; Spinoza, 1996), and the ways in  
4857 which reason and affect form two dynamics of sociability and social bonds, and thus the foundations  
4858 of collective life. We can learn from approaches that illuminate the importance of infrastructures of  
4859 care, trust and support in maintaining lives worth living (Berlant 2016).

4860 In the next section we return to the youth co-researchers' agenda and explore what we learned  
4861 through the *Loneliness Connects Us* research and the implications for youth loneliness research and  
4862 practice.

## 4863 <2> The *Loneliness Connects Us* youth co-researcher agenda

4864 The first phase of the project culminated with the co-researchers coming together to reflect and  
4865 articulate a research agenda. As presented in Chapter Three, the agenda was intended to inform  
4866 both the *Loneliness Connects Us* research and the wider field. Here we highlight the key research  
4867 findings we have presented in this book in relation to social conditions and experiencing difference,  
4868 re-imagining connection, and youth work and moving methods. We conclude by a discussion of the  
4869 ways in which this book contributes to the renewal of radical democratic approaches to community  
4870 and education.

## 4871 <3> The social conditions of loneliness: Experiencing difference.

4872 One key aspect of life now routinely shamed is the experience of poverty. The importance of poverty  
4873 as a vector of loneliness became increasingly evident in the inquiry. The research identified the  
4874 profound ways in which austerity and poverty, precarity and inequality were exacerbated by and  
4875 entangled in feelings of loneliness, shame and disconnection. The evidence of this has been  
4876 presented in the first section of the book. We witnessed this individually in a boy who did not feel  
4877 he could socialise with his peer group because his mother could not afford the brand trainers he felt  
4878 were the dress code or standard of entry for friendship. We visited a youth club so underfunded the  
4879 youth worker did not know if it would be open, if he had paid work, from week to week. An activity  
4880 for the group was catching the bus out of town and walking home. Of course, it is not that children  
4881 with more privileged or affluent backgrounds do not experience loneliness or isolation. Yet less  
4882 privileged young people are more vulnerable to the closure of youth work services, parks, and other  
4883 beyond school opportunities as a feature of austerity politics with its destruction of convivial publics  
4884 and social abundance (Fisher 2018) as well as to the processes of cultural governance associated

4885 with neoliberalism, which functions through the social abjection of particular 'out' groups based on  
4886 systems of classification mobilised through f social power (Tyler 2013, 2020).

4887 Difference within the social was a core concern throughout the research. The co-researchers sought  
4888 to better understand the changes accompanying 'being 13' and the anxieties and awkwardness  
4889 when one is no longer a child and yet to become an adult. Youth is a time of multiple *firsts* – the first  
4890 relationship breakdown or the first time away from home. Without the experience and confidence  
4891 of having previously overcome adversity, a young person is especially vulnerable to isolation and  
4892 loneliness. For many young people the transience and mobilities of modern life mean they  
4893 encounter numerous *firsts*, whether the transitions between stages of schooling or moving from the  
4894 family home to study or get work. Each move can mean the weakening of ties and the challenges of  
4895 making new connections. And exploring difference meant not only in the shared newness of  
4896 loneliness in youth but also the loneliness arising from normative and stigmatizing response to forms  
4897 of difference in sexuality and gender identity in LGBTQI+ communities.

4898 We turned to insights from feminist and queer theory to think loneliness in relation to normativity  
4899 and difference. Our research followed feminist and activist practices for deep listening and attuning  
4900 to one another across and in the affirmation of difference (Lorde 1984; Montgomery & bergman  
4901 2017). Audre Lorde, in particular, inspires us to perceive human difference as resources for creative  
4902 change. Her writings allow for the interruption of the reproduction of shame through joyful  
4903 encounters that affirm the lives that are seemingly different, weird and odd. The second section of  
4904 the book has presented our evidence here.

4905 Taken together these were forceful reasons to think beyond the individualisation of loneliness, and  
4906 take seriously the social conditions of youth loneliness.

### 4907 <3> Re-imagining connection

4908 We identified approaches for understanding what factors are necessary for defining loneliness and  
4909 also in helping prevent or navigate unwanted loneliness. The evidence for this has been presented in  
4910 the third section of the book.

4911 Being known and accepted for who you are represents a powerful sense of connection, yet one in  
4912 which young people whose lives are defined by normative responses to difference might face  
4913 barriers to realise. Equally those caught up unquestioningly with normative youth transitions find  
4914 themselves surprised that they do not thereby escape loneliness. Maintaining genuine or authentic  
4915 connections might be difficult for any young person if they have to move friendship group, school or  
4916 place of residence. We cannot wish away the fragmentation and acceleration of young people's  
4917 lives. Many of the young people we met during the research felt defined by their academic grades,  
4918 were focused on investing career success over taking time to make friends, or felt compelled to  
4919 promote an image of themselves through social media as living a life of conspicuous consumption.  
4920 We need to think carefully and compassionately about the ways we can develop more expansive  
4921 ways of relating to one another.

4922 A further set of findings related to online spaces, building connections and the politicisation of  
4923 loneliness. We aimed to question and contextualise the apparent causal relationships between social  
4924 media, loneliness and isolation as communicated in mainstream media. Instead, we found that  
4925 young people recognise the potentials of the Internet beyond social media. Yet there was an  
4926 acknowledgement of the powerful and pervasive pressures that social media technologies impose  
4927 on young people. Amongst the abundance of online connections, the youth co-researchers were  
4928 interested in how young people can ask for or offer support and friendship, especially considering  
4929 the anxieties and awkwardness engendered by loneliness.

4930 Finally re-imagining connection goes hand in hand with seeing youth loneliness as a political issue.  
4931 We believe that responding to youth loneliness requires developing new forms of solidarity,

4932 belonging and friendship but see also the limitations of some forms of media campaigning. It is in  
4933 the acknowledgement of the politics of loneliness and the politicisation of youth loneliness that we  
4934 can re-imagine new ways of young people relating to one another. There is evidence that the burden  
4935 of the global financial crises from 2008 onwards disproportionately affected young people and  
4936 further constrained a generation's prospects, and thus politicising and pushing young people to the  
4937 political left (Milburn 2019). Whether it was the Deliveroo cyclist questioning precarious  
4938 employment or the young man that joined a union, some of the young people we encountered were  
4939 asking political questions about the problems they faced and the causes of those problems. We  
4940 recognise that some young people are committed to taking political action but we argue too that we  
4941 need to invest in models that support young people access the skills and capacities to take political  
4942 action around loneliness as one significant painful and damaging aspect of current social relations

### 4943 <3> Youth Work Practices and Moving Methods

4944 A final powerful finding from the research was the productivity of exploring youth loneliness through  
4945 diverse and plural methods, grounded in youth work practice. The approach developed out of some  
4946 fairly practical concerns. The funder wanted the research – the focus and the methods – to be  
4947 defined by the group of youth co-researchers once it was formed. So we began the project without  
4948 any definite commitments to specific methods, except that this would be a participatory or co-  
4949 produced inquiry. It soon became clear that a singular research method, for example a participatory  
4950 photovoice project for all young people, or approach for data analysis would foreclose young  
4951 people's diverse experiences of loneliness and limit the forms of engagement for the whole research  
4952 team.

4953 As presented in chapters 2 and 13, together with the youth co-researchers we staged a series of  
4954 collective and iterative encounters with loneliness in relation to different media such as film, song,  
4955 fiction and sites and stages of youth. One of the youth co-researchers reflected on her participation  
4956 in the project,



4957 “I’m not sure I can say what loneliness is... define it... but ... but I didn’t realise before [participating  
4958 in the research] that it connects to so many different things, you can find it everywhere, in films, in  
4959 music, talking to friends.” (Christine, 19 years old, Manchester)

4960 It was in exploring these connections with young people that we were able to move beyond an initial  
4961 impasse with young people where they would deny they ever were lonely or suggested  
4962 individualising responses such as, ‘if I was lonely I’d just talk to someone.’ Making montages with  
4963 magazine and newspaper articles, and developing scenarios of, for example, using social media,  
4964 foregrounded the pressures young people face to be connected. We discussed research findings and  
4965 statistics. We reflected on our personal experiences and we told and re-told these through  
4966 narratives in the third person (Haug 1992). This continual process of telling and re-telling, unfixing  
4967 and re-fixing, interpreting and re-articulating enabled us to move beyond understanding loneliness  
4968 as a personal and individual failing.

4969 There were therefore numerous lines of inquiry within *Loneliness Connects Us*. In our encounters  
4970 with young people we heard experiences and thoughts of how something apparently universal –  
4971 loneliness – was so richly textured in diverse lives. Whether with a gay child living in a socially  
4972 conservative community or with someone who might be considered ‘normal’, we started where the  
4973 young people were and built a dialogue from there. These moments grew through a radical  
4974 openness in the approach of the research team, a refusal to know in advance what meanings to  
4975 assign to difference and a continuous commitment to dialogue and uncertainty. We attuned to these  
4976 encounters by drawing on diverse intellectual resources from cultural studies, sociology, philosophy,  
4977 psychology, youth studies, feminism, theatre and performance. In addition, we engaged with  
4978 multiple methodologies for developing research from interviews and community philosophy to using  
4979 immersive theatre and eventful co-production. This polyphonic approach, within the framing  
4980 created by the original research agendas, is a significant strength of this research project.

4981 Nonetheless, there are troubling aspects concerning the productive potentials of youth work  
4982 practices and spaces, and of arts and creativity in enabling young people to safely encounter and  
4983 navigate feelings of loneliness. Under the austerity programme in the UK, the expenditure on social  
4984 work provision has been severely cut. Youth services have suffered a 73% reduction in funding by  
4985 £1billion since 2010, with 14,500 youth and community workers cut since 2008, and 750 youth  
4986 centres closed since 2012 (Labour 2019). Arts and creative activities performed an important role in  
4987 *Loneliness Connects Us*, and are a very significant and welcome presence in wider responses to the  
4988 youth loneliness agenda. One established critique of the risks of youth engagement with arts as a  
4989 form of therapy sees such practice as functioning to relieve and ameliorate anxiety or mental health  
4990 issues or mask structural inequalities (O'Brien & Donelan 2008; Haiven 2018). Various arts practices  
4991 are well understood as an effective part of helping young people navigate periods of mental ill  
4992 health (Fancourt & Finn 2019). Yet when the engagement is individual, apolitical and conditional on  
4993 being unwell it may be seen only as enabling young people to endure intolerable situations. It is a  
4994 great tragedy that for most young people access to arts and creative activities in the UK has been  
4995 severely constrained. In part this is due to a lack of funding for the arts in mainstream schooling and  
4996 also the narrowing of the curriculum to focus on *academic* subjects such as maths and English.

4997 There is therefore a danger that art practice and cultural pursuits are co-opted as a form of  
4998 neoliberal self-care (Michaeli 2017). Ecclestone and Hayes (2008) question shifts towards the  
4999 therapy-culture, well-being agenda and positive psychology which focus on issues such as self-  
5000 esteem, confidence and motivation. Whether art and culture or yoga and meditation these practices  
5001 are commodified as packages, 'apps' or programmes and delivered in schools and workplaces as  
5002 ways of ameliorating the stresses and anxieties of living in the competitive and precarious conditions  
5003 of late capitalism (Davies 2015; Purser 2019). Sara Amsler (2011) writes of the need to resist these  
5004 seemingly well-intentioned discourses and practices of therapeutic education and instead to  
5005 develop,

5006 “the actual forms of affective labour which may condition the radical intellectual transformations  
5007 that transform a ‘happy consciousness’ into a critical one and that can help to reconstitute learned  
5008 fatalism into a desire for agency” (Amsler 2011, p.59)

5009 Rather than only attempting to remove negative experiences from young people’s lives, in this case  
5010 feelings of loneliness, we may need to ‘stay with the trouble’ (Haraway 2016, 167). An instructive  
5011 place to start is to ask what youth loneliness provokes us to change or do differently. Psychology  
5012 understands loneliness as an adaptive drive, a social pain or evolutionary drive that reminds us to  
5013 increase the quality or quantity of our social connection (Cacioppo 2009). Scaling this evolutionary  
5014 drive to a societal level, we might wonder what this signal is reminding or asking of us to do?

5015 The next two sections explore the implications of the research for the development of the youth  
5016 loneliness policy and research agendas.

## 5017 <2> Re-engaging with the loneliness agenda

5018 The *Loneliness Connects Us* research was commissioned to work with young people to understand  
5019 loneliness and create knowledge that provides practical support for young people and those working  
5020 with and for them to navigate experiences of loneliness. That we are not short of youth research,  
5021 recommendations, manifestos and ideas for responding to various youth social issues that  
5022 nevertheless persist should give us pause for thought. We are used to witnessing: the identification  
5023 of youth issues and the calls for more funding for innovation and research, better approaches to  
5024 measurement, the identification of ‘what works’, the creation of new policies and strategies, the  
5025 appointment of ministers or policy ‘Tsars’, and issuing guidance for practitioners. The youth  
5026 loneliness agenda has broadly developed within this neoliberalising common sense, and so we might  
5027 wonder why these strategies will be effective in this case.

5028 The significance of the social conditions of loneliness raises a series of challenges for how loneliness  
5029 interventions are currently conceived. It is important to recognise that there has been significant  
5030 investment in loneliness projects and we are waiting to fully appreciate the ingenuity and craft in

5031 their design and implementation as this evidence remains within the projects. Nevertheless, the  
5032 evidence-base for loneliness interventions is recognised as being under-developed (Victor 2019). In  
5033 addition, there is a critique of the thin sociality of such interventions, where lonely individuals are  
5034 signposted or socially prescribed to participate in formal group activities to 'fill time' yet the  
5035 dynamics of how this relates to reducing loneliness are poorly understood (Oman 2019). In one  
5036 version of such interventions, loneliness is best remedied through creating new opportunities (such  
5037 as social prescribing) and spaces for connection (such as the Co-op Foundation & Department of  
5038 Culture, Media and Sport *Spaces to Connect* programme). We do not criticise these programmes as  
5039 such and they are in fact very welcome in the conditions of austerity we have discussed. A young  
5040 person struggling with entrenched feelings of loneliness may benefit greatly from reconnecting with  
5041 other people through supported activities. Furthermore, the *Spaces to Connect* programme is part of  
5042 an *Endangered Spaces* campaign to redress the loss of public spaces in England. It is important  
5043 however to remain attentive to the possibility that an imperative to connect through loneliness  
5044 interventions may become an additional pressure on an individual who, in refusing both such  
5045 pressure and such connection, may then be perceived as 'failing to engage'.

5046 The *Loneliness Connects Us* research provides a view of young people's social and emotional lives  
5047 that is both relational and complex and includes an emphasis on the need to create positive  
5048 opportunities for stillness and solitude. For a number of the young people we spoke to being alone  
5049 was safer and preferable to being with others. The choice to be alone is a choice that can create  
5050 resources against loneliness. Enabling young people to feel okay in their own company, to  
5051 experience being by oneself in solitude as joyous, is therefore powerful. One of our youth co-  
5052 researchers Sumaiya (23 years old, Manchester) struggled with mental ill health but found solace in  
5053 solitude. She would walk alone late at night in a local park. Climbing trees, sitting on benches and  
5054 hiding in bushes was where she found peace by herself. When she returned home she would  
5055 sometimes write poetry and post it in an online forum. Sumaiya certainly found this path to  
5056 connecting with herself through her own resources and in doing so she had received a considerable

5057 support through the services at 42<sup>nd</sup> Street – a youth mental health and well-being charity. Making  
5058 solitude as a resource concrete for young people requires more than a young person alone, and it is  
5059 not necessarily cheap. In advocating for young people to access solitude, this is not license for policy  
5060 makers to leave young people to it, to isolate or exclude them from infrastructures of care.

5061 A second aspect of neoliberalising common sense on youth issues is a reliance on campaigns, in this  
5062 case campaigns to reduce loneliness. There are established practice traditions for raising awareness,  
5063 stigma reduction and normalisation in a range of public health and equality issues. Similarly, there  
5064 is the UK Government's #LetsTalkLoneliness campaign with the tagline 'All of us can experience  
5065 loneliness at some point in our lives. It's time we started talking about it.' (Let's Talk Loneliness  
5066 2020). The Co-op Foundation has launched the *Lonely not Alone* campaign co-produced with young  
5067 people. The campaign encourages young people to talk about loneliness, and for people of all ages  
5068 to wear yellow socks to communicate a quiet message that you are thinking of those experiencing  
5069 loneliness. Such initiatives will be much strengthened by sharing evidence (such as has been  
5070 presented here) about how they relate to a lack of investment in broader infrastructures of care and  
5071 connection. The danger throughout the charitable sector currently is that the funding of professional  
5072 marketing and digital media support to grassroots work provides a glossy finish on otherwise  
5073 underfunded and struggling youth provision.

5074 During the research we were approached by a number of organisations, projects and campaigns to  
5075 advise on interventions to reduce youth loneliness. One involved a marketing campaign for students,  
5076 which consisted of a series of social media images of young people in social scenes with (an  
5077 equivalent phrasing of), 'Loneliness never looked so good!' The campaign was to be followed up with  
5078 information and signposting to existing social infrastructure, such as university societies, counselling  
5079 services. Yet these societies were not receiving extra support, investment and training from the  
5080 university for responding to any lonely young people that might try to access them for support.  
5081 Marketing and Comms as campaigning cannot exist as a standalone initiative. Communicating

5082 messages to encourage people to open up and talk about loneliness and maybe engage with people  
5083 who might be lonely is no doubt positive. And many of the young people we spoke to would not be  
5084 ready to have such encounters and need support.

5085 One of the recommendations proposed by young people at the Youth Summit we hosted to explore  
5086 practical action emerging from the youth co-research was to inspire a social movement of young  
5087 people to engage with youth loneliness. It is unclear what such a movement might look like, who the  
5088 membership would be and what it would mean to them. We, however, should be sceptical of re-  
5089 appropriation of the language of social movements with an emphasis on influence and change,  
5090 disconnected from critical and political challenges to society. Instead it is instructive to think with  
5091 the histories and experiences of the social movements that have worked to counter oppression and  
5092 exploitation in the form of gay liberation, black rights, disability rights, and feminism. It is prudent to  
5093 acknowledge the scale of the sustained activism, protest, organisation and the creative cultural work  
5094 to articulate new identities, create new social arrangements required in changing perceptions about  
5095 what it means to be gay, black, disabled, a woman or indeed lonely.

## 5096 <2> Radical Democracy

5097 During the research we repeatedly returned to the conclusion that the challenges posed by youth  
5098 loneliness transcend the purview of, for example, a loneliness ‘minister’ or the traction of funded  
5099 loneliness projects: radical change is necessary. The necessity for change was starkly affirmed when  
5100 we met young people whose lives were most profoundly affected by the cruelty of plural structures  
5101 of capitalist oppression, based on racism, imperialism, and heteropatriarchy. We met a young  
5102 Afghan refugee, traumatised by his life experiences, both in his homeland and in the UK, and  
5103 currently sleeping rough. We met a young trans person who thought of themselves with bittersweet  
5104 humour as a skeleton. For these young people loneliness, isolation and disconnection was entangled  
5105 with and exacerbating other forms of exclusion and marginalisation, anxiety and pain. Yet for other  
5106 young people, ones we might not normally think of as ‘outsiders’, the unpleasant experiences of

5107 loneliness were a feature of life, and the factors associated with both kinds of experience of the  
5108 'normal', whether included in or excluded from its terms, are set to entrench and accelerate. The  
5109 majority of young people face an uncertain future, with narrowing life opportunities, immanent  
5110 climate catastrophe and fraying social and emotional infrastructures of care and support (Green  
5111 2017). The activist refrain seems more urgent than ever: If not now, when? If not us, who?

5112 In the introduction to this chapter we stated that youth loneliness transcends the purview of  
5113 ministers or the traction of projects but this is not a counsel of despair. Rather we are confident that  
5114 young people are more than capable of imagining and enacting more caring and convivial ways of  
5115 relating to one another across difference and in commonality. Building on the youth work practices  
5116 of the *Loneliness Connects Us* research which proposed to revitalise the loneliness agenda within the  
5117 traditions of Paolo Freire – inspired Community Education, the research presented throughout this  
5118 book is finally offered as a contribution to discussions of education and radical democracy.

5119 Critical community educators formed in Freirean and Gramscian traditions would certainly have  
5120 expected critical dialogue about loneliness to lead to a praxis of transformation. In Gramscian  
5121 traditions of community development, this would have involved demands and practices which  
5122 systematically sought to shift the balance of power towards the people and away from the power  
5123 bloc. Such a form of struggle is harder to discern in contemporary conditions. Therefore, by radical  
5124 democratic education we here refer both to the practices of radical democracy and the ways in  
5125 which these practices are themselves educative (as for example when young people act as advocates  
5126 together, or join a Trade Union) and to the pedagogies which open up new ways of being and acting  
5127 in the world (the more informal practices of support and learning together discussed throughout the  
5128 book).

5129 We can see the democratic possibilities inherent in the ways we found young people making sense  
5130 of their circumstances and, sometimes, negotiating new kinds of possibility for ways of being  
5131 together in the face of extreme difficulty. They therefore have a good deal of insight to offer into

5132 how to develop the practices of friendship, solidarity and mutual support we have recognised in the  
5133 final chapters of this study, without guarantees of social transformation. We saw this in the FOMO  
5134 project but also in the ways of being together which some of the research team embodied for the  
5135 year in which the project happened, in unlikely friendships and resilient insistence that loneliness,  
5136 though terrible, was not always the worst thing. There are clues in this study, therefore, for a  
5137 research agenda that further develops our understanding of new ways to theorise and to practice a  
5138 radical democratic community education both as enacting democratic power and as embodying  
5139 practices of mutual support and care.

5140 Pedagogies of hope and liberation do in themselves create new possibilities in contexts in which a  
5141 fatalism about the (im)possibility of transformation has taken hold. Such perspectives on everyday  
5142 struggles with loneliness which were shared in the process of this study require further enquiry and  
5143 strengthening in radical democratic education to come. There are clues to be found in the methods  
5144 which the research project adopted which built on the histories of Critical Participatory Action  
5145 Research (PAR) in Youth and Community Work. These included practices such as the refusal to treat  
5146 research participants or even their 'loneliness' as objects of study in which the researchers were the  
5147 knowing subjects, which is entirely in accordance with the pedagogies of hope and courage which  
5148 Freirean-inspired practice advocates. Through collaborative research methods, this study has  
5149 contributed to the understanding of research creation practices as collaborative 'subject with  
5150 subject' practices. As we have shown, especially in the practices associated with the production of  
5151 'Missing' and the tour, it was possible to create hopeful spaces of connection in the moment and for  
5152 a depth of sharing and enquiry to occur. This was facilitated through aesthetic processes and was  
5153 supported through a framework rooted in feminist approaches to the politics of the everyday,  
5154 reaching an account of powerful experiences through small prompts and small stories, which cued  
5155 responses which went beyond the 'scripted conversations' of which some forms of critical pedagogy  
5156 have been accused. This was not a cartoon version of stripping away the illusions of powerlessness  
5157 and loneliness in order to uncover the truth of connection. Rather, it was the openness of the critical



5158 dialogues which ‘Missing’ facilitated which catalysed the sense of a prefigurative space, replete with  
5159 as yet unnamed possibilities both within loneliness itself and its antidotes. We therefore argue very  
5160 strongly that an open research-creation approach, with deep roots in performance and other  
5161 aesthetic practices, will have much to offer both to the study of loneliness and to the re-emergence  
5162 of radical democratic forms of community education as a prefigurative practice (Amsler, 2015;  
5163 Fielding and Moss, 2010).

5164 We can learn too from the ways in which movements that seek to create counter-practices to the  
5165 hegemonic individualising practices of capitalism place a powerful emphasis on forms of care and  
5166 mutual aid. Activist and alternative movements are not immune from oppressive relations, whether  
5167 in the ‘tyranny of structurelessness’ (Freeman 1972) or the joylessness of ‘rigid radicalism’ (bergman  
5168 and Montgomery 2017). These failures as such are not inevitable (although some form of failure is)  
5169 and it is the continual negotiation of tendencies towards hierarchy and exclusion that is the focus of  
5170 democratic organising. Indeed, care becomes an essential set of capacities and a survival strategy for  
5171 navigating precarious worlds and living with marginalised identities. The traditionally undervalued  
5172 nature of care means such capacities are open to co-optation by capitalist structures, adding  
5173 additional burdens of care on already marginalised individuals and groups. Yet to care for one  
5174 another is educative and prefigurative. As Hobart and Kneese (2020) explain,

5175 “engaging in mutual aid projects teaches us essential skills that are denied in white patriarchal  
5176 capitalism, such as collaboration, feedback, and participatory decision making.” (p. 13)

5177 These are all characteristics of the practice of radical democratic community education and critical  
5178 participatory action research in which this study has its roots.

5179 Whilst being ‘new here’ has been a critical lens for this research, in terms of our general findings we  
5180 argue that rather than thinking of youth loneliness in terms of an unprecedented epochal rupture  
5181 we have sought to think about continuities and inheritances especially in counter-practices which  
5182 sought to build cultures of solidarity and friendship. An advantage of this approach is that we can

look to historical antecedents and seek to revitalise these traditions and forms of creative potential. For example, the Co-op Foundation funded the *Loneliness Connects Us* research, and the Co-op has been at the forefront of promoting the issue of loneliness (Kantar Public, Red Cross & Co-op 2016) and youth loneliness (Co-op Foundation 2018). The co-operative movement was founded in Rochdale in 1844 by a community that were no longer prepared to consume bread made with sawdust to increase profits for ruthless business owners. We might wonder if Co-operativism was the late 19<sup>th</sup> Century response to adulterated bread, then what might our collective wit and capacities develop as a co-operative response to the social conditions of youth loneliness. We are interested in the traditions and philosophical and ethical resources concerning the power of friendship, mutuality, association and co-operation. We issue a plea to make concrete again these resources, both in spaces and places already owned by the Co-operative Movement but also linked to the development of contemporary online cultural resources – especially through music, film and communication spaces – in order to make visible aspects of loneliness and mutuality, and to speak to the possibility of a different way of being. However, we could also look to the determination and social imagination of previous eras that built public parks, founded movements such as the Scouts and Woodcraft Folk, created spaces like the Lads and Girls Clubs, and invested in youth work practices, services and practitioners.

## <2> Recommendations

A constant focus of the work with young people across all the activities was to explore ways of better understanding loneliness and practical strategies for young people to navigate experiences of loneliness. As an example, Missing the immersive theatre performance provided young people with an encounter with loneliness where there were no simple causes and no easy answers. The power of the performance is that the character was not someone one would expect to be lonely, she had friends, family, a relationship, and viable if frustrated plans for her future. Yet she struggled with loneliness. The performance of Missing ends with the question, ‘What could I do? What could you do?’ This started a dialogue with 160 young people in 20 groups across the UK. It was by building on

5209 the youth co-research and then contextualising these findings through further events – the youth  
5210 summit, Missing performances, and the FOMO legacy project – that we developed, tested and  
5211 refined this list of recommendations:

5212 Things we can all do or not do:

- 5213 ✓ Avoid the trap of thinking youth loneliness is a crisis or epidemic that affects all young  
5214 people, be proportionate but aware
- 5215 ✓ Name and recognise loneliness among young people as a natural dimension to life and  
5216 growing up – do not treat it as something to be ashamed or afraid of
- 5217 ✓ Don't automatically associate loneliness with depression and anxiety or other expressions of  
5218 mental ill health, but recognise the possibility and be ready to offer or find the right support  
5219 if it is needed
- 5220 ✓ Recognise how change and transition may impact on a young person's ability to connect and  
5221 may lead to loneliness and support them through these changes
- 5222 ✓ Recognise how feeling different might create a sense of isolation and make an effort to think  
5223 beyond your own experience and identity
- 5224 ✓ Recognise how poverty might impact on a young person's ability to join in, take part and feel  
5225 a sense of belonging and find ways of getting round it. Make things possible for everybody:  
5226 don't single people out
- 5227 ✓ Explore ways of thinking beyond the responsibility of individual young people to interpret  
5228 and act in response to feeling loneliness, we need collective and societal change
- 5229 ✓ Recognise the additional pressures that social media can have on young people, but also  
5230 recognise the positive relationships and connections that social media can offer

- 5231 ✓ Work to reduce the stigma of feeling lonely, normalise being alone and promote attitudes
- 5232 and experiences of solitude
  
- 5233 ✓ Recognise how cultural influences might impact on young people's expectations and
- 5234 behaviours and how groups that make belonging for one person might be making exclusion
- 5235 for others
  
- 5236 ✓ Work with young people to expand and create new cultural artefacts, relationships,
- 5237 resources and repertoires of social practice and action
  
- 5238 ✓ Recognise how academic achievement and the competition for success can be shadowed by
- 5239 the loneliness and disappointment of failure and the fear of disappointing others who have
- 5240 invested in a young person's potential success
  
- 5241 ✓ Recognise how difficult it may be for young people to acknowledge that they need help and
- 5242 or to articulate and ask for it: make it easier for them
  
- 5243 ✓ Value and encourage the ways young people find of supporting themselves and one
- 5244 another: notice and learn from the ways young people find to support one another
  
- 5245 ✓ Value and resource parks and open spaces with opportunities for safe ways of being alone
- 5246 and opportunities for connection
  
- 5247 ✓ Value and resource projects that make times and places for sharing interests, enthusiasms
- 5248 and many forms of creativity
  
- 5249 ✓ Start the conversation and don't give up on it, whilst creating opportunities for shared
- 5250 activities and interests where people can connect without talking, or at least before they
- 5251 start to talk
  
- 5252 ✓ Make and appreciate low-key offers of connection and companionship, especially at
- 5253 moments of difficulty or change

- 5254 ✓ Support the development of common spaces so all young people feel that they belong
- 5255 somewhere
- 5256 ✓ Build up the understanding of 'friendship' and what friends can do for and with one another;
- 5257 as well as what friends do not do if they are to remain our friend
- 5258 ✓ Try not to bottle things up
- 5259
- 5260
- 5261

## <1> References

- ACEVO (2015) *Coming in from the Cold: Why we need to talk about loneliness amongst our young people*, London: ACEVO.
- Action for Children (2009) *Stuck in the Middle: The Importance of Supporting Six to 13 Year Olds*, London: Action for Children.
- Action for Children, National Children's Bureau & The Children's Society (2017) *Turning the tide: Reversing the move to late intervention spending in children and young people's services*, Available online:  
[https://www.ncb.org.uk/sites/default/files/field/attachment/Turning%20the%20tide%20report\\_final.pdf](https://www.ncb.org.uk/sites/default/files/field/attachment/Turning%20the%20tide%20report_final.pdf)
- Ahmed, S. (2006) *Queer Phenomenology*, Durham: Duke University Press.
- Amsler, S.S. (2011) 'From "therapeutic" to political education: the centrality of affective sensibility in critical pedagogy', *Critical Studies in Education*, 52(1), 47-63.
- Amsler, S.S. (2015) *The education of radical democracy*, London: Routledge.
- ALFIE (2014) Alliance for Inclusive Education, Available online: [www.alfie.org.uk](http://www.alfie.org.uk)
- Allen, K. (2016) 'Top girls navigating austere times: interrogating youth transitions since the "crisis"', *Journal of Youth Studies*, 19(6), 805-820.
- Allen, K., & Bull, A. (2018). 'Following Policy: A Network Ethnography of the UK Character Education Policy Community', *Sociological Research Online*, 23(2), 438-458.
- Alston, P. (2018) Statement on Visit to the United Kingdom, by Professor Philip Alston, United Nations Special Rapporteur on extreme poverty and human rights, London, 16 November 2018, Available online:  
<https://www.ohchr.org/EN/Issues/Poverty/Pages/SRExtremePovertyIndex.aspx>
- Appel, H., Gerlach, A.L. & Crusius, J. (2016) 'The interplay between Facebook use, social comparison, envy, and depression', *Current Opinion in Psychology*, 9, 44-49.
- Asthana, A. (2017) Loneliness is a 'giant evil' of our time, says Jo Cox commission, *The Guardian*, Society, Sunday 10<sup>th</sup> December. Available at:

- 5289 [https://www.theguardian.com/society/2017/dec/10/loneliness-is-a-giant-evil-of-our-time-](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2017/dec/10/loneliness-is-a-giant-evil-of-our-time-says-jo-cox-commission)  
5290 [says-jo-cox-commission](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2017/dec/10/loneliness-is-a-giant-evil-of-our-time-says-jo-cox-commission)
- 5291 Back, L. (2007) *The Art of Listening*, London: Berg.
- 5292 Balibar, E. (1998). *Spinoza & Politics*. London; New York: Verso.
- 5293 Ball, S. Macrae, S. & Maguire, M. (2013) *Choice, Pathways and Transitions Post-16 New*  
5294 *Youth, New Economies in the Global City*, London Routledge.
- 5295 Banks, S. (2018) 'Cultivating researcher integrity: virtue-based approaches to research  
5296 ethics' in N. Emmerich (ed) *Virtue Ethics in the Conduct and Governance of Social Science*  
5297 *Research (Advances in Research Ethics and Integrity, Vol. 3)*, Bingley: Emerald Publishing, pp.  
5298 21-43.
- 5299 Batsleer, J. (2008) *Informal Learning in Youth Work*, London: Sage.
- 5300 Batsleer, J. (2013) *Youth Working with Girls and Women in Community Settings — A*  
5301 *Feminist Perspective*, London: Ashgate Arena.
- 5302 Bauman, Z. (2000) *Liquid Modernity*, Cambridge: Polity Press.
- 5303 Belfiore, E. (2002) 'Art as a means of alleviating social exclusion: Does it really work? A  
5304 Critique of instrumental cultural policies and social impact studies in the UK', *International*  
5305 *Journal of Cultural Policy*, 8(1), 91-106.
- 5306 Bell, D.M. & Pahl, K. (2018) 'Co-production: towards a utopian approach', *International*  
5307 *Journal of Social Research Methodology*, 21(1), 105–117
- 5308 Bellis, A. (2019) *Tackling Loneliness*, BRIEFING PAPER Number 8514, 5 August 2019, House of  
5309 Commons Library.
- 5310 bergman. c. & Montgomery, N. (2017) *Joyful Militancy: Building Thriving Resistance in Toxic*  
5311 *Times*, Edinburgh: AK Press/ Institute for Anarchist Studies.
- 5312 Berlant, L. (2016) 'The commons: Infrastructures for troubling times', *Environment and*  
5313 *Planning D: Society and Space*, 34(3), 393–419
- 5314 Beveridge, W. (1942) *Social Insurance and Allied Services* (Cmd. 6404), London: HMSO.
- 5315 Bourriaud, N. (2002) *Relational Aesthetics*, Paris: Presses du Reel.

5316 Biressi, A. (2017) 'Idols of Self-Production: Selfies, Career Success and Social Class,' in Deery,  
 5317 J. & Press, A. (eds.) *Media and Class: TV, Film and Digital Culture*. London: Routledge, pp.  
 5318 131-145.

5319 Bishop, C. (2012) *Artificial Hells: Participatory Art and the Politics of Spectatorship*, London:  
 5320 Verso.

5321 Boal, A.O. (1970) *Theatre of the Oppressed*, London: Pluto Press.

5322 Booker, C.L., Kelly, Y.J., & Sacker, A. (2018) 'Gender differences in the associations between  
 5323 age trends of social media interaction and well-being among 10-15 year olds in the UK', *BMC*  
 5324 *Public Health*, 18(321), 1-12.

5325 boyd, d. (2014) *it's complicated: the social lives of networked teens*, New Haven; London:  
 5326 Yale University Press.

5327 Brandon, D. (1976, 1990) *Zen in the Art Of Helping*, London: Routledge and Kegan Paul.

5328 Brownmiller, S. (1999) *In Our Time: Memoir of a Revolution*, New York: Dial Press.

5329 Burman, E. (2018) '(Re)sourcing the Character and Resilience Manifesto: Suppressions and  
 5330 slippages of (re)presentation and selective affectivities', *Sociological Research Online*, 23(2),  
 5331 416–437.

5332 Butler, J. (1990) *Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity*, New York:  
 5333 Routledge.

5334 Cacioppo, J.T. (2009) *Loneliness: Human Nature and the Need for Social Connection*, New  
 5335 York; London: W.W. Norton & Company.

5336 Cacioppo, J.T. and Hawkley, L.C. (2009) 'Perceived social isolation and cognition', *Trends in*  
 5337 *Cognitive Science*, 13(10), 447-454.

5338 Cacioppo, J.T. and Patrick, W. (2009) *Loneliness: Human Nature and the Need for Social*  
 5339 *Connection*, New York; London: W.W. Norton and Company.

5340 Cacioppo, J.T., Fowler, J.H., and Christakis, N.A. (2009). 'Alone in the Crowd: The Structure  
 5341 and Spread of Loneliness in a Large Social Network', *Journal of Personality and Social*  
 5342 *Psychology*, 97(6), 977–991.



- 5343 Cacioppo, J. T., Hawkley, L. C., Norman, G. J., & Berntson, G. G. (2011) 'Social isolation',  
 5344 *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences*, 1231(1), 17–22.
- 5345 Campbell, D. (2019) Depression in girls linked to higher use of social media, *The Guardian*,  
 5346 Friday 4<sup>th</sup> January, Available online:  
 5347 [https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/jan/04/depression-in-girls-linked-to-higher-](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/jan/04/depression-in-girls-linked-to-higher-use-of-social-media)  
 5348 [use-of-social-media](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/jan/04/depression-in-girls-linked-to-higher-use-of-social-media)
- 5349 Campaign to End Loneliness (2019) Threat to Health, Webpage, Available online:  
 5350 <https://www.campaigntoendloneliness.org/threat-to-health/>
- 5351 Child Poverty Action Group (2019) Child Poverty in Working Families on the Rise, Available  
 5352 online: <http://www.cpag.org.uk/content/child-poverty-working-families-rise>
- 5353 Clarke, J. and Glendinning, C. (2002) 'Partnership and the remaking of welfare governance',  
 5354 in C. Glendinning et al (eds) *Partnerships, New Labour and the Governance of Welfare*,  
 5355 Bristol: Policy Press, pp. 33-50.
- 5356 Cleverley, K. & Kidd, S. A. (2011) 'Resilience and suicidality among homeless youth', *Journal*  
 5357 *of Adolescence*, 34(5), 1049-1054.
- 5358 Code, L. (1991) *What can She Know? Feminist Theory and the Construction of Knowledge*,  
 5359 Ithaca: Cornell University Press
- 5360 Cohen, S. (1972) *Folk devils and moral panics*, London: MacGibbon and Kee.
- 5361 Collin, P. & Swist, T. (2016) 'From products to publics? The potential of participatory design  
 5362 for research on youth, safety and well-being', *Journal of Youth Studies*, 19(3), 305-318
- 5363 Co-op Foundation (2018) *All our emotions are important: Breaking the silence about youth*  
 5364 *loneliness*, Manchester: Co-op Foundation.
- 5365 Cutter-Mackenzie-Knowles A., & Rousell D. (2019) 'The Mesh of Playing, Theorizing, and  
 5366 Researching in the Reality of Climate Change: Creating the Co-research Playspace', In:  
 5367 Cutter-Mackenzie-Knowles A., Malone K., Barratt Hacking E. (eds) *Research Handbook on*  
 5368 *Childhoodnature*. Springer International Handbooks of Education. Cham, CZ: Springer.

5369 Davies, B. (2019) *Austerity, Youth Policy and the Deconstruction of the Youth Service in*  
5370 *England*, London: Palgrave Macmillan.

5371 Davies, J.S. (2009) 'The limits of joined-up government: towards a political analysis', *Public*  
5372 *Administration*, Vol. 87, No. 1, pp. 80-96.

5373 Davies, W. (2015) *The Happiness Industry: How the Government and Big Business Sold Us*  
5374 *Well-Being*, London: Verso.

5375 DCMS (2018) *A connected society: A strategy for tackling loneliness – laying the foundations*  
5376 *for change*, London: Department for Digital, Culture, Media and Sport.

5377 Deckers, A., Muris, P., & Roelofs, J. (2017) Being on Your Own or Feeling Lonely? Loneliness  
5378 and Other Social Variables in Youths with Autism Spectrum Disorders, *Child psychiatry and*  
5379 *human development*, 48(5), 828–839.

5380 Dorling, D. (2018) *Peak Inequality: Britain's Ticking Time Bomb*, Oxford: Polity Press.

5381 Easton, M (2018) How should we tackle the loneliness epidemic? BBC News, 11 February  
5382 2018, Available online: <https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/uk-42887932>

5383 Ecclestone, K., & Hayes, D. (2008) *The dangerous rise of therapeutic education*, London &  
5384 New York: Routledge.

5385 Ellerman, D. (2006) *Helping People Help Themselves From the World Bank to an Alternative*  
5386 *Philosophy of Development Assistance*, Michigan: University of Michigan Press.

5387 Emejulu, A. (2011) 'Re-theorizing feminist community development: towards a radical  
5388 democratic citizenship', *Community Development Journal*, 46(3), 378–390.

5389 Fancourt D, & Finn S. (2019) What is the evidence on the role of the arts in improving health  
5390 and well-being? A scoping review. Health Evidence Network (HEN) synthesis report 67,  
5391 Copenhagen: WHO Regional Office for Europe.

5392 Fielding, M. and Moss, P. (2011) *Radical education and the common school: a democratic*  
5393 *alternative*, London and New York, Routledge.

5394 Fine, M. (2016) 'Just methods in revolting times', *Qualitative Research in Psychology*, 13(4),  
5395 347-365.

- 5396 Fisher, M, (2014) 'Good for Nothing', *Occupied Times*, March 19<sup>th</sup>,  
5397 <http://theoccupiedtimes.org/?p=12841>
- 5398 Fisher, M. (2018) *k-punk: The Collected and Unpublished Writings of Mark Fisher (2004–*  
5399 *2016)*, London: Repeater Books.
- 5400 Foucault, M. (1975) *Abnormal: Lectures at the College de France 1974-1975*, London and  
5401 New York: Verso.
- 5402 Foucault, M. (1977) *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison*, London: Allen Lane.
- 5403 Foucault, M. (1978) *The History of Sexuality, Volume 1: An Introduction*, Harmondsworth:  
5404 Penguin.
- 5405 Freeman, J. (1972) The Tyranny of Structurelessness, *Berkeley Journal of Sociology*, 17, 151-  
5406 164
- 5407 Freire, P. (1972) *Pedagogy of the Oppressed*, Harmondsworth: Penguin.
- 5408 Gatens, M. & Lloyd, G. (1999) *Collective Imaginings: Spinoza, Past and Present*, New York:  
5409 Routledge.
- 5410 Gonick, M. & Gannon, S. (2014) *Becoming Girl Collective Biography and the Production of*  
5411 *Girlhood*, Toronto: Canadian Scholars Press/ The Women's Press.
- 5412 Goode, E., & Ben-Yehuda, N. (1994) *Moral panics: The social construction of deviance*,  
5413 Cambridge: Basil Blackwell.
- 5414 Gormally, S. & Coburn, A. (2016) 'Finding Nexus: connecting youth work and research  
5415 practices', *British Education Research Journal*, 40(5), 869-88.
- 5416 Green, A. (2017) *The Crisis for Young People: Generational Inequalities in Education, Work,*  
5417 *Housing and Welfare*, London: Palgrave Pivot.
- 5418 Greenstein, A. (2015) *Radical Inclusive Education: Disability, Inclusion and Struggles for*  
5419 *Liberation*, London: Routledge.
- 5420 Griffin, J. (2010) *The Lonely Society?* London: Mental Health Foundation, Available online:  
5421 <http://www.mentalhealth.org.uk/publications/the-lonely-society/>

5422 Hammond, C. (2018a) Who feels lonely? The results of the world's largest loneliness study,  
 5423 BBC Radio 4, Available online:  
 5424 [https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/articles/2yzhfv4DvqVp5nZyxBD8G23/who-feels-](https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/articles/2yzhfv4DvqVp5nZyxBD8G23/who-feels-lonely-the-results-of-the-world-s-largest-loneliness-study)  
 5425 [lonely-the-results-of-the-world-s-largest-loneliness-study](https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/articles/2yzhfv4DvqVp5nZyxBD8G23/who-feels-lonely-the-results-of-the-world-s-largest-loneliness-study)

5426 Hammond, C. (2018b) BBC Loneliness Experiment, Available online:  
 5427 <https://claudiahammond.com/bbc-loneliness-experiment/>

5428 Haiven, M. (2018) 'Participatory art within, against and beyond financialization: benign  
 5429 pessimism, tactical parasitics and the encrypted common', *Cultural Studies*, 32(4), 530-559.

5430 Hanckel, B., Vivienne, S., Byron, P., Robards, B., & Churchill, B. (2019) "'That's not  
 5431 necessarily for them": LGBTIQ+ young people, social media platform affordances and  
 5432 identity curation', *Media, Culture & Society*, 41(8), 1261–1278.

5433 Haraway, D. (1988) 'Situated Knowledges: The Science Question in Feminism and the  
 5434 Privilege of Partial Perspective', *Feminist Studies*, 14(3), 575-599.

5435 Haraway, D.J. (2016) *Staying with the Trouble: Making Kin in the Chthulucene*, Durham;  
 5436 London: Duke University Press.

5437 Harvey, D. (2007) *A Brief History of Neoliberalism*, Oxford: Oxford University Press.

5438 Hauben, M.F. (1995) *The Netizens and Community Networks*, Paper presented at the  
 5439 Hypernetwork '95 Beppu Bay Conference, Available online:  
 5440 <http://www.columbia.edu/~hauben/text/bbc95spch.txt>

5441 Haug, F. (1992) *Beyond female masochism: Memory-work and politics* (R. Livingstone,  
 5442 Trans.) London: Verso.

5443 Hitchin, E. & Shaw, I. (2019) Intervention – "Shrinking Worlds: Austerity and Depression",  
 5444 Antipode Online, 7<sup>th</sup> March 2019, Available online:  
 5445 <https://antipodeonline.org/2019/03/07/shrinking-worlds-austerity-and-depression/>

5446 Hobart, H.J.K. & Kneese, T. (2020) 'Radical Care: Survival Strategies for Uncertain Times',  
 5447 *Social Text* 142,8(1), 1-16.

5448 Holloway, S.L., Brown, G. & Pimlott-Wilson, H. (2011) 'Editorial introduction: geographies of  
 5449 education and aspiration', *Childrens Geographies*, 9(1), pp.1-5.

5450 Holt-Lunstad, J., Smith, T.B. & Layton, J.B. (2010) 'Social Relationships and Mortality Risk: A  
5451 Meta-analytic Review', *PLOS Medicine*, 7(7): e1000316.

5452 Holt-Lunstad, J., (2017) 'The Potential Public Health Relevance of Social Isolation and  
5453 Loneliness: Prevalence, Epidemiology, and Risk Factors', *Public Policy & Aging Report*, 27(4),  
5454 127–130.

5455 Howe, N. (2019) Millennials And The Loneliness Epidemic, *Forbes*, May 3, 2019, Available at:  
5456 [https://www.forbes.com/sites/neilhowe/2019/05/03/millennials-and-the-loneliness-](https://www.forbes.com/sites/neilhowe/2019/05/03/millennials-and-the-loneliness-epidemic/#69ef82347676)  
5457 [epidemic/#69ef82347676](https://www.forbes.com/sites/neilhowe/2019/05/03/millennials-and-the-loneliness-epidemic/#69ef82347676)

5458 Hutchison, D. and Woods, R. (2010) *ChildLine casenotes: Children talking to ChildLine about*  
5459 *loneliness*, London: NSPCC.

5460 In Defence of Youth Work (2019) About, Available online:  
5461 <https://indefenceofyouthwork.com/about/>

5462 Invisible Committee (2015) *To Our Friends* (trans. Robert Hurley), South Pasadena:  
5463 Semiotext(e)

5464 Ivinson, G. (2020) 'The power of living knowledge: re-imagining horizontal knowledge', *Asia-*  
5465 *Pacific Journal of Teacher Education*, 48(1), 15-29.

5466 Ivinson, G. and Renold, E. (2019) 'Anticipating the more-than: working with prehension in  
5467 artful interventions with young people in a postindustrial community', *Futures*, 112.

5468 Jensen, T. and Tyler, I. (2015) 'Benefits broods: the cultural and political crafting of anti-  
5469 welfare commonsense', *Critical Social Policy*, 35(4), 470-491.

5470 Jo Cox Commission on Loneliness (2017) *Combatting loneliness one conversation at a time:*  
5471 *A call to action*, London: Jo Cox Commission on Loneliness.

5472 Jopling, K. & Sserwnja, I. (2016) *Loneliness across the lifecourse: A rapid review of the*  
5473 *evidence*, London: Calouste Gulbenkian Foundation.

5474 de Jong-Gierveld, J. (1987). Developing and Testing a Model of Loneliness, *Journal of*  
5475 *Personality and Social Psychology*, 53(1), 119-28

5476 de Jong-Gierveld, J., van Tilburg, T.G. and Dykstra, P.A. (2016) 'Loneliness and Social  
5477 Isolation', in Anita Vangelisti and Daniel Perlman (eds.) *The Cambridge Handbook of*  
5478 *Personal Relationships*, 2<sup>nd</sup> edition, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, pp. 1-30.

5479 JRF (2013) *Neighbourhood Approaches to Loneliness: Our Stories*, Available online:  
5480 [https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/JRF\\_Loneliness\\_case\\_studies.p](https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/JRF_Loneliness_case_studies.pdf)  
5481 [df](https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/JRF_Loneliness_case_studies.pdf)

5482 JRF (2016) *We can solve poverty in the UK*, Available online:  
5483 <https://www.jrf.org.uk/file/49544/download?token=FoqXGz9y&filetype=download>

5484 JRF (2018) *UK Poverty 2018: A comprehensive analysis of poverty trends and figures*, York:  
5485 Joseph Rowntree Foundation.

5486 Kantar Public, Co-op, British Red Cross, (2016) *Trapped in a Bubble: An investigation into*  
5487 *triggers for loneliness in the UK*, Available online:  
5488 [http://www.redcross.org.uk/~/\\_media/BritishRedCross/Documents/What%20we%20do/UK%](http://www.redcross.org.uk/~/_media/BritishRedCross/Documents/What%20we%20do/UK%20services/Co_Op_Trapped_in_a_bubble_report_AW.pdf)  
5489 [20services/Co Op Trapped in a bubble report AW.pdf](http://www.redcross.org.uk/~/_media/BritishRedCross/Documents/What%20we%20do/UK%20services/Co_Op_Trapped_in_a_bubble_report_AW.pdf)

5490 Kardefelt-Winther, D. et al. (2017) 'How can we conceptualize behavioral addiction without  
5491 pathologizing common behaviors?' *Addiction*, 1–7.

5492 Khaleeli, H. (2013) Britain's loneliness epidemic, *The Guardian*, Tuesday 22<sup>nd</sup> January 2013.  
5493 Available at: <https://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/jan/22/the-loneliness-epidemic>

5494 Kramer, D.I., Guillory, J.E. and Hancock, J.T. (2014) 'Experimental evidence of massive-scale  
5495 emotional contagion through social networks', *PNAS*, 111(24), 8788–8790.

5496 Kross, E., Verduyn, P., Demiralp, E., Park, J., Lee, D.S., Lin, N. (2013) 'Facebook Use Predicts  
5497 Declines in Subjective Well-Being in Young Adults', *PLoS ONE*, 8(8): e69841.

5498 Kubler Ross, E. (1969) *On Death and Dying*, New York: Simon and Schuster Touchstone.

5499 Labour (2019) *Only Young Once: The Labour Party's Vision for Rebuilding Youth Services*,  
5500 London: The Labour Party.

5501 Ladkin, S., McKay, R. & Bojesen, E. (2016) 'Introduction: Against Value', in S. Ladkin, R.  
5502 McKay & E. Bojesen (eds.) *Against Value in the Arts and Education*, London; New York:  
5503 Rowman & Littlefield International, pp. 1-34.

5504 Laing, O. (2017) *The Lonely City: Adventures in the Art of Being Alone*, New York; London:  
 5505 Picador.

5506 Let's Talk Loneliness (2019) Home page, Available online: <https://letstalkloneliness.co.uk>

5507 Local Government Association (2017) Councils face £2 billion funding gap to support  
 5508 vulnerable children by 2020, Available online:  
 5509 [https://www.local.gov.uk/about/news/councils-face-2-billion-funding-gap-support-](https://www.local.gov.uk/about/news/councils-face-2-billion-funding-gap-support-vulnerable-children-2020)  
 5510 [vulnerable-children-2020](https://www.local.gov.uk/about/news/councils-face-2-billion-funding-gap-support-vulnerable-children-2020)

5511 Lorde, A. (1984) 'Women, Age, Race and Class: Women redefining Difference' in *Sister*  
 5512 *Outsider*, Freedom, CA: Crossing Press.

5513 Mackey, S. (2016) 'Applied theatre and practice as research: polyphonic conversations',  
 5514 *Research in Drama Education: The Journal of Applied Theatre and Performance*, 21(4), 478-  
 5515 491.

5516 Maitland, S. (2014) *How to Be Alone*, London: The School of Life.

5517 Manchester Institute of Education (2018) *The BBC Loneliness Experiment*, Available online:  
 5518 <https://www.seed.manchester.ac.uk/education/research/bbc-loneliness-experiment/>

5519 Masi, C. et al. (2011) 'A Meta-Analysis of Interventions to Reduce Loneliness', *Personality*  
 5520 *and Social Psychology Review*, 15(3), 219-66.

5521 Massumi, B. (2015) *Politics of Affect*, Cambridge; Malden, MA: Polity Press.

5522 Matthews, P. et al. (2017) 'Everyday stories of impact: interpreting knowledge exchange in  
 5523 the contemporary university', *Evidence & Policy*, 14(4), 665-682.

5524 McGimpsey, I. (2018) 'The new youth sector assemblage: reforming youth provision through  
 5525 a finance capital imaginary', *Journal of Education Policy*, 33(2), 226-242,

5526 Mendick, H., Allen, K., & Harvey, L. (2015) "'We can Get Everything We Want if We Try  
 5527 Hard": Young People, Celebrity, Hard Work', *British Journal of Educational Studies*, 63(2), pp.  
 5528 161-178.

5529 Michaeli, I. (2017) "Self-Care: An Act of Political Warfare or a Neoliberal Trap?"  
 5530 *Development*, 60(1-2), 50-56.

5531 Milburn, K. (2019) *Generation Left*, Bristol: Polity Press.

- 5532 Milner, M. (1937, 1987) *An Experiment In Leisure*, London: Virago.
- 5533 Mohdin, A. (2019) Nearly a million more young adults now live with parents – study, *The*  
 5534 *Guardian*, Friday 8<sup>th</sup> February 2019. Available online:  
 5535 [https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/feb/08/million-more-young-adults-live-](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/feb/08/million-more-young-adults-live-parents-uk-housing)  
 5536 [parents-uk-housing](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/feb/08/million-more-young-adults-live-parents-uk-housing)
- 5537 Mould, O. (2018) *Against Creativity*, London: Verso.
- 5538 Mullan, K. (2018) 'Technology and Children's Screen-Based Activities in the UK: The Story  
 5539 of the Millennium So Far', *Child Indicators Research*, 11(6), 1781–1800.
- 5540 Murthy V. (2016) 'The Surgeon General's Prescription of Happiness', *TEDMED*, Available  
 5541 online: <https://tedmed.com/talks/show?id=527633>
- 5542 Nadler, S. (2002) 'Baruch Spinoza', in Steven Nadler (eds.) *A Companion to Early Modern*  
 5543 *Philosophy*, Malden, MA; Oxford: Blackwell Publishers Ltd, pp. 225-246.
- 5544 National Autistic Society (2018) *Hidden crisis: Autistic people four times more likely to be*  
 5545 *lonely than general public*. Available online: [https://www.autism.org.uk/get-](https://www.autism.org.uk/get-involved/media-centre/news/2018-04-25-hidden-crisis-autism-and-loneliness.aspx)  
 5546 [involved/media-centre/news/2018-04-25-hidden-crisis-autism-and-loneliness.aspx](https://www.autism.org.uk/get-involved/media-centre/news/2018-04-25-hidden-crisis-autism-and-loneliness.aspx)
- 5547 O'Brien, A. & Donelan, K. (2008) *The Arts and Youth 'At Risk'*, Cambridge Scholars Publishing:  
 5548 Newcastle-Upon-Tyne.
- 5549 Obordo, R. (2018) 'Social media has poisoned us': young Britons on why they are unhappy,  
 5550 *The Guardian*, Monday 9<sup>th</sup> April. Available online:  
 5551 [https://www.theguardian.com/society/2018/apr/09/social-media-has-poisoned-us-young-](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2018/apr/09/social-media-has-poisoned-us-young-brits-on-why-they-are-unhappy)  
 5552 [brits-on-why-they-are-unhappy](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2018/apr/09/social-media-has-poisoned-us-young-brits-on-why-they-are-unhappy)
- 5553 Oliveros, P. (2005). *Deep Listening: A Composer's Sound Practice*, New York: iUniverse, Inc.
- 5554 Oman, S. (2019) 'How do you manage with loneliness'? *Observations from the field:*  
 5555 *Problematizing participation as the solution to loneliness*. Presentation at: Thinking and  
 5556 measuring loneliness across the life course, Wednesday 12th June, Manchester  
 5557 Metropolitan University.
- 5558 ONS (2018) *Children's and young people's experiences of loneliness 2018*, London: Office of  
 5559 National Statistics.



- 5560 Ord, J. (2104) 'Aristotle's Phronesis and Youth Work: Beyond Instrumentality', *Youth &*  
5561 *Policy*, 112, 56-73.
- 5562 Orr, G. (2014) Britain has been voted the loneliness capital of Europe – so how did we  
5563 become so isolated? *The Independent*, Thursday 26<sup>th</sup> June. Available online:  
5564 [https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/health-and-families/features/britain-has-been-](https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/health-and-families/features/britain-has-been-voted-the-loneliness-capital-of-europe-so-how-did-we-become-so-isolated-9566617.html)  
5565 [voted-the-loneliness-capital-of-europe-so-how-did-we-become-so-isolated-9566617.html](https://www.independent.co.uk/life-style/health-and-families/features/britain-has-been-voted-the-loneliness-capital-of-europe-so-how-did-we-become-so-isolated-9566617.html)
- 5566 Pasquale, F.A. (2015) 'The Algorithmic Self', *The Hedgehog Review*, 17(1).
- 5567 Peck, J. (2010). *Constructions of Neoliberal Reason*, Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- 5568 Perlman, D. & Peplau, L.A. (1981) 'Toward a Social Psychology of Loneliness', in S.W. Duck &  
5569 R. Gilmour (eds.) *Personal Relationships 3: Personal Relationships in Disorder*, London:  
5570 Academic Press, pp. 31-56.
- 5571 Peplau, D. & Perlman, L.A. (1982) *Loneliness: A Sourcebook of Current Theory, Research and*  
5572 *Therapy*, New York: Wiley InterScience.
- 5573 Prensky, M. (2001) 'Digital Natives, Digital Immigrants', *On the Horizon*, 9(5), 1-6.
- 5574 Prince's Trust (2019) *Youth Index 2019*, London: Prince's Trust.
- 5575 Porta, M. (2000) (Ed) *Dictionary of Epidemiology*, 5th ed. New York: Oxford University Press.
- 5576 Probyn, E. (2004) 'Everyday shame', *Cultural Studies*, 18(2-3), 328-349.
- 5577 Purser, R. (2019) *McMindfulness: How mindfulness became the new capitalist spirituality*,  
5578 London: Repeater Books.
- 5579 Qualter, P., Rotenberg, K. J. Barrett, L., Henzi, P, et al., (2013) 'Investigating Hypervigilance  
5580 for Social Threat of Lonely Children', *Journal of Abnormal Child Psychology*, 41, 325-338.
- 5581 Qualter, P. et al. (2015) 'Loneliness Across the Life Span', *Perspectives on Psychological*  
5582 *Science*, 10(2), 250–264.
- 5583 Qualter, P. et al. (2018) *ESRC Strategic Think Piece on Loneliness*. Unpublished document.
- 5584 Ranciere, J. (2010) *Dissensus: On Politics and Aesthetics*, trans. S. Corcoran, London:  
5585 Continuum.
- 5586 Read, J. (2017) *The Politics of Transindividuality*, Chicago, IL: Haymarket Books.

5587 Redhead, H. (2019) We millennials have more ‘friends’ than ever. So why are we so lonely?  
 5588 *The Guardian*, Tuesday 8th October, Available online:  
 5589 [https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/oct/08/millennials-social-media-loneliness-](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/oct/08/millennials-social-media-loneliness-epidemic)  
 5590 [epidemic](https://www.theguardian.com/society/2019/oct/08/millennials-social-media-loneliness-epidemic)

5591 Ringrose J. (2007) ‘Successful girls?: Complicating post-feminist, neo-liberal discourses of  
 5592 educational achievement and gender equality’, *Gender and Education*, 19(4), pp. 471-489.

5593 Riva, P. Wirth, J.H. & Williams, K.D. (2011) ‘The consequences of pain: The social and  
 5594 physical pain overlap on psychological responses’, *European Journal of Social Psychology*,  
 5595 41(6), 681-687.

5596 Rogers, C. (2016) “‘I’m complicit and I’m ambivalent and that’s crazy”’: Care-less spaces for  
 5597 women in the academy’, *Women’s Studies International Forum*, 61, 115-122.

5598 Rose, N. (1999) *Governing the Soul: The Making of the Private Self*, 2nd ed., London: Free  
 5599 Association Books.

5600 Safronova, V. (2017) Instagram is Now a Dating Platform, Too. Here’s How It Works, *New*  
 5601 *York Times*, Dec 21<sup>st</sup>. [https://www.nytimes.com/2017/12/21/style/instagram-thirst-traps-](https://www.nytimes.com/2017/12/21/style/instagram-thirst-traps-dating-breakups.html)  
 5602 [dating-breakups.html](https://www.nytimes.com/2017/12/21/style/instagram-thirst-traps-dating-breakups.html)

5603 Sedgwick, E.K. (1991) *Epistemology of the closet*, London: Harvester Wheatsheaf.

5604 Selos, C. & Mair, J. (2012) ‘Innovation Is Not the Holy Grail’, *Stanford Social Innovation*  
 5605 *Review*, Fall 2012. Available online:  
 5606 [https://ssir.org/articles/entry/innovation\\_is\\_not\\_the\\_holy\\_grail](https://ssir.org/articles/entry/innovation_is_not_the_holy_grail)

5607 Seymour, R. (2019) *The Twittering Machine*, London: Indigo Press.

5608 Shildrick, T. (2018) *Poverty Propaganda: Exploring the Myths*, Bristol: Policy Press.

5609 Shildrick, T., MacDonald, R., Webster C., and Garthwaite K. (2010) *The Low Pay No Pay*  
 5610 *Cycle: Understanding Recurrent Poverty*, York: JRF and University of Teesside. Available  
 5611 online [https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/unemployment-pay-](https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/unemployment-pay-poverty-full.pdf)  
 5612 [poverty-full.pdf](https://www.jrf.org.uk/sites/default/files/jrf/migrated/files/unemployment-pay-poverty-full.pdf)

5613 Shirky, C. (2008) *Here Comes Everybody: The Power of Organizing Without Organizations*,  
 5614 London; New York: Penguin Group.

5615 Sim, N. (2019) *Youth work, galleries and the politics of partnership*, London: Palgrave  
 5616 Macmillan.

5617 Siraj-Blatchford, I. (2010) 'Learning in the home and at school: how working class children  
 5618 "succeed against the odds"', *British Educational Research Journal*, 36(3), 463-482.

5619 Sivanandan, A. (1990) *Communities of Resistance: writings on black struggles for socialism*,  
 5620 London: Verso.

5621 Skeggs B, and Loveday V. (2012) 'Struggles for value: Value practices, injustice, judgment,  
 5622 affect and the idea of class', *British Journal of Sociology*, 63(3): 472–490.

5623 Spinoza, B. (1996). *Ethics*. Trans. Edwin Curley. London; New York: Penguin Books.

5624 Springgay, S. & Truman, S.E. (2018) *Walking Methodologies in a More-than-Human World: WalkingLab*. London, UK: Routledge.

5626 Srnicek, N (2017) *Platform Capitalism*, Cambridge: Polity Press.

5627 Stewart, K. (2007) *Ordinary Affect*, Durham: Duke University Press.

5628 Studdert, D., & Walkerdine, V. (2016) *Rethinking Community Research: Inter-relationality, Communal Being and Commonality*, London: Palgrave Macmillan UK

5630 de St. Croix, T. (2016) *Grassroots youth work: Policy, passion and resistance in practice*,  
 5631 Bristol: Policy Press.

5632 de St Croix, T. (2017) 'Time to say goodbye to the National Citizen Service?' *Youth & Policy*,  
 5633 Available online: <https://www.youthandpolicy.org/articles/time-to-say-goodbye-ncs/>

5634 Stenning, A. and Hall, S.M. (2018) On the Frontline: Loneliness and the Politics of Austerity,  
 5635 Discover Society, 6<sup>th</sup> November, Available online:  
 5636 [https://discoversociety.org/2018/11/06/on-the-frontline-loneliness-and-the-politics-of-](https://discoversociety.org/2018/11/06/on-the-frontline-loneliness-and-the-politics-of-austerity/)  
 5637 [austerity/](https://discoversociety.org/2018/11/06/on-the-frontline-loneliness-and-the-politics-of-austerity/)

5638 Storr, A. (1989) *Solitude: A return to the self*, London: Harper Collins Publishers.

5639 Studdert, D. and Walkerdine, V. (2016) *Rethinking Community Research. Inter-relationality, Communal Being and Commonality*, London: Palgrave MacMillan.

5641 Tapscott, D. & Williams, A.D. (2006) *Wikinomics: How Mass Collaboration Changes Everything*, London: Atlantic Books.

5643 Thomson, C. (2016) 'Texting Isn't the First New Technology Thought to Impair Social Skills',  
 5644 *Smithsonian Magazine*, March. Available online:  
 5645 [https://www.smithsonianmag.com/innovation/texting-isnt-first-new-technology-thought-](https://www.smithsonianmag.com/innovation/texting-isnt-first-new-technology-thought-impair-social-skills-180958091/)  
 5646 [impair-social-skills-180958091/](https://www.smithsonianmag.com/innovation/texting-isnt-first-new-technology-thought-impair-social-skills-180958091/)  
 5647 Tiffany, G. et al. (2013) *Community Philosophy*, Sapere: Philosophy for Children, Colleges,  
 5648 Communities, Oxford.  
 5649 Tillich, P. (2010) *The Eternal Now*, London: SCM Press.  
 5650 Time (2006) *Time Person of the Year*, December 25<sup>th</sup>.  
 5651 Townsend, P. (1979) *Poverty in the United Kingdom: a survey of household resources and*  
 5652 *standards of living*, Harmondsworth: Penguin.  
 5653 Turel, O., Brevers, H.E., and Bechara, D. (2018) 'Delay discounting mediates the association  
 5654 between posterior insular cortex volume and social media addiction symptoms,' *Cognitive,*  
 5655 *Affective & Behavioral Neuroscience*, 18(4), 694-704.  
 5656 Turkle, S. (2011) *Alone together: Why we expect more from technology and less from each*  
 5657 *other*. New York: Basic Books.  
 5658 Tyler, I. (2013) *Revolting Subjects: Social Abjection and Resistance in Neoliberal Britain*,  
 5659 London: Zed Books  
 5660 Tyler, I. (2020) *Stigma Machines*, London: Zed Press.  
 5661 UCAS (2019) Gap years – ideas and things to think about. Available online:  
 5662 <https://www.ucas.com/alternatives/gap-year/gap-years-ideas-and-things-think-about>  
 5663 Victor, C.R., Scambler, S., Bond, J., & Bowling, A. (2000) 'Being alone in later life: Loneliness,  
 5664 social isolation and living alone', *Reviews in Clinical Gerontology*, 10(4), 407-417.  
 5665 Victor, C.R. & Yang, K. (2012) The Prevalence of Loneliness Among Adults: A Case Study of  
 5666 the United Kingdom, *The Journal of Psychology*, 146(1-2), 85-104.  
 5667 Victor, C.R., et al. (2019) *Towards an Understanding of Loneliness Across the Lifecourse -*  
 5668 *Findings from a Conceptual Review*. Presentation at: Thinking and measuring loneliness  
 5669 across the life course, Wednesday 12th June, Manchester Metropolitan University.

5670 Wakefield, J. (2018) Is social media causing childhood depression? *BBC Online*, 10th  
5671 February 2018, Available online: <https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/technology-42705881>

5672 Vincent, D. (2019) Loneliness: the Making of a Modern Panic, *Solititudes: Past and Present*,  
5673 Available online: [https://solitudes.qmul.ac.uk/blog/loneliness-the-making-of-a-modern-](https://solitudes.qmul.ac.uk/blog/loneliness-the-making-of-a-modern-panic/)  
5674 [panic/](https://solitudes.qmul.ac.uk/blog/loneliness-the-making-of-a-modern-panic/)

5675 Woods, H.C. & Scott, H. (2016) ‘#Sleepyteens: Social media use in adolescence is associated  
5676 with poor sleep quality, anxiety, depression and low self-esteem,’ *Journal of Adolescence*,  
5677 51, 41-49.

5678 Woolf, V. (2003) *A Writer’s Diary: Being Extracts from the Diary of Virginia Woolf*, (Leonard  
5679 Woolf ed.), San Diego, New York, London; Harvest Book.

5680 Wroe, L., Larkin, R. & Maglajilic, R. (2019) *Social Work with Refugees, Asylum Seekers and*  
5681 *Migrants Theory and Skills for Practice*, London: Jessica Kingsley.

5682 Young, K. (2007) *The Art of Youth Work*, Nottingham: Russell House Press.

5683 Zipin, L, Sellar, S., Brennan, M., & Gale, T. (2015) ‘Educating for Futures in Marginalized  
5684 Regions: A sociological framework for rethinking and researching aspirations’, *Educational*  
5685 *Philosophy and Theory*, 47(3), 227-246.

5686 Zeedyk, S.M., Cohen, S.R., Eisenhower, A. & Blacher J. (2016) ‘Perceived Social Competence  
5687 and Loneliness Among Young Children with ASD: Child, Parent and Teacher Reports’, *Journal*  
5688 *of Autism and Developmental Disorder*, 46(2), 436-49.

5689 Zuboff, S. (2018) *The Age of Surveillance Capitalism: The Fight for a Human Future at the*  
5690 *New Frontier of Power*, London: Profile Books.

5691

5692

5693

5694

5695

5696

5697

5698

5699